A FIRST CONTRIBUTION TO OUR KNOWLEDGE OF THE FLORA OF THE TALAUD ISLANDS AND MOROTAI

by

L. B. HOLTHUIS and H. J. LAM
(Rijksherbarium, Leiden).

(Issued June 15th, 1942)

CONTENTS

GENERAL PART

(H. J. LAM)

1. INTRODUCTION.

The Talaud Islands are forming part of the Malay Archipelago, being situated north of Celebes and the Moluccas, south of Mindanao and east of the Sangihe group, between 3°45′ and 5°35′ N. lat. and 126°32′ and 127°10′ E. long.

The main group consists of three larger islands, viz. Karakelong, Salebaboe and Kaboerocang. The Nenoesa islands, a group formed by the small islands of Garete, Karaton, Merampi, Mengkopoe, Intata, Kakelotan and Maroh are situated northeast of the main group, including also

Miangas (Palmas), an islet about 65 miles north of Karakelong, near Mindanao.

Morotai, belonging to the Moluccas, is situated north of Halmahera.

The botanical exploration of these islands, thusfar unexplored in this respect, had, in the early twenties, been suggested by Dr. E. D. Merrill, the well-known authority on Malaysian phytogeography. The then director of the Government Botanic Garden, Buitenzorg, Java, Dr. W. M. Docters van Leeuwen, appreciating this advice, organized a small exploration party under the guidance of the senior writer of the present paper, then botanist at the Buitenzorg Herbarium. On account of the limited time, this exploration, made from April 21st to July 1st, 1926, was of a preliminary nature. In my collecting work, I was assisted by two native attendants, Iboet, mantri at the Buitenzorg Herbarium, for the botany and Erih, mantri at the Zoological Museum, Buitenzorg, for the zoology. The map (*Fig. 1*) shows the route as well as the localities where collections were made. Their numbers correspond with those in the accompanying list, from which it may be seen, which numbers were collected in a given locality.

The purpose of this preliminary survey was to collect materials towards our knowledge of the phytogeography of these parts. It was, more particularly, desired to know whether and if so, to what degree there exists a phytogeographical relation between the Philippines on one hand and the Moluccas and New Guinea on the other. Recently, namely, several plants of apparently Papuan relationship had been detected in the Philippines (cf. Merrill, 1926) and it might therefore be expected that some of them would also occur in the interjacent islands, viz. the Talaud group and Morotai. It may be pointed out here that, some time later, a similar problem arose with reference to Central Celebes (Malili, etc.)

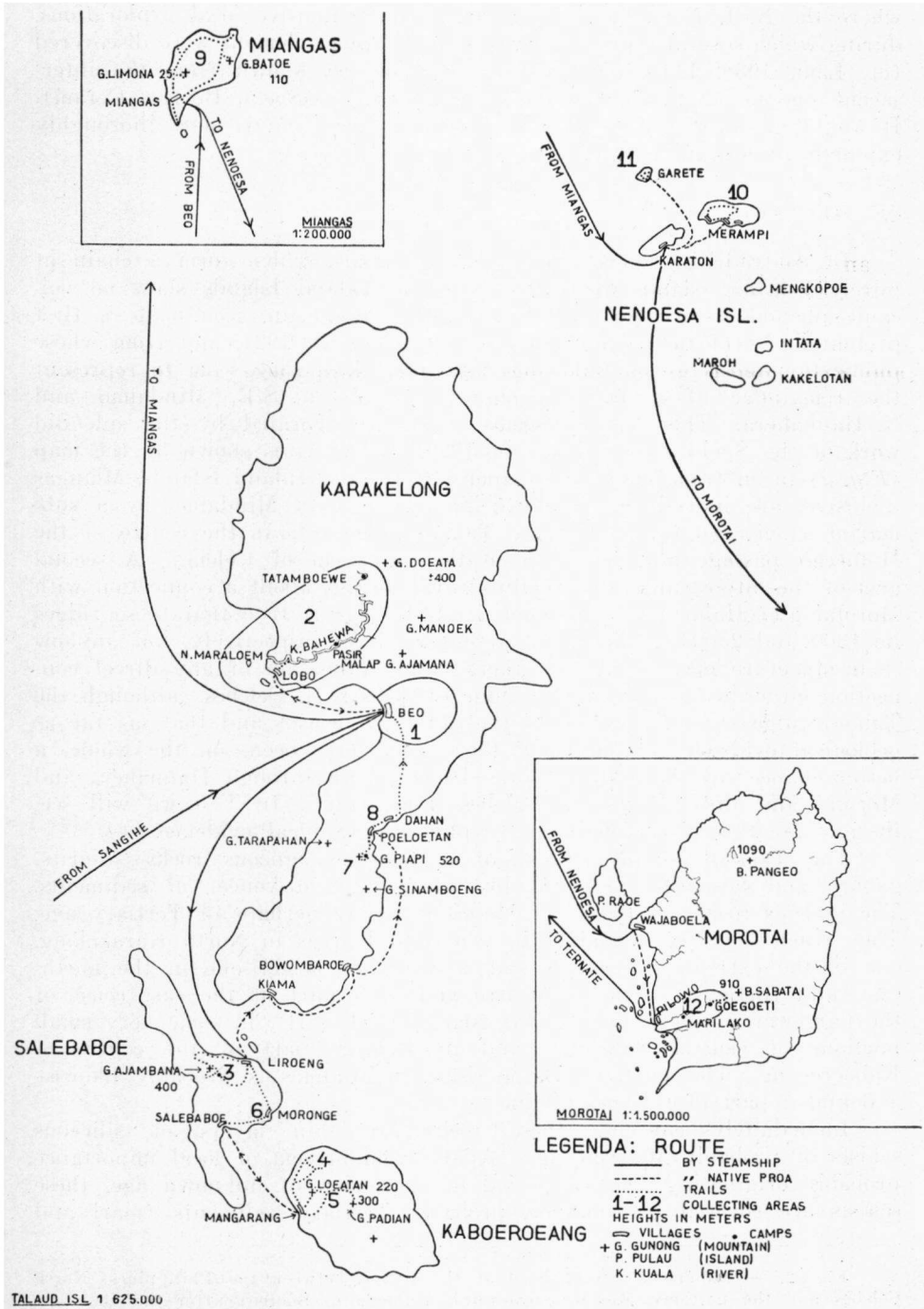
Fig. 1. — Map showing the route followed and the localities (cf. General Part, § 4).

Loc. 1 — Karakelong, vicinity of Beo: Nrs. 2475—2510, 2510a, 2511—2683, 3349, 3351—3352.
Loc. 2 — Karakelong, from Lobo along K. Bahewa (on the way Pasir Malap) and its tributary K. Tatamboewe to camp. Vicinity of camp: Nrs. 2684—2786, 2786a, 2787—2972; riverbanks K. Bahewa (Pasir Malap) and vicinity of Lobo: Nrs. 2973—3035, 3037; N. Maraloem: Nrs. 3036, 3038—3041.
Loc. 3 — Salebaboe, vicinity of Liroeng and G. Ajambana: Nrs. 3042—3172, 3348.
Loc. 4 — Kaboeroeang, groves of Lapean'a and Tonan'a forest reserves: Nr. 3173—3199.
Loc. 5 — Kaboeroeang, K. Ampas grove and trail to G. Padian (Pangangadoan'a and Boewid'oe wawi, tertiary secondary rocks): Nrs. 3200—3215.
Loc. 6 — Salebaboe, Moronge, Lota-swamp: Nrs. 3216—3232.
Loc. 7 — Karakelong, G. Piapi, east slope and top: Nrs. 3233—3339.
Loc. 8 — Karakelong, along trail Poeloetan — Dahang: Nrs. 3340—3347, 3350.
Loc. 9 — Miangas: Nrs. 3353—3367, 3367a, 3368—3395, 3395a, 3396—3415.
Loc. 10 — Nenoesa, Merampi: Nrs. 3416—3438.
Loc. 11 — Nenoesa, Garete: Nrs. 3439—3456.
Loc. 12 — Morotai, along K. Pilowo to Marilako and Goegoeti and on western slope of G. Sabatai above Goegoeti camp. Vicinity of Goegoeti: Nrs. 3457—3461, 3461a, 3462—3491, 3493—3600, 3600a, 3601—3628 (G. Ligòjer: Nrs. 3579—3603); riverbanks Goegoeti-Marilako-Pilowo: Nrs. 3492, 3629—3683.
Loc.12a — Morotai, Wajaboela: Nr. 3684.

CONSPECTUS OF THE CHARACTERS OF THE EUCOMMIACEAE AND SOME OTHER FAMILIES

THOSE CHARACTERS IN WHICH THE VARIOUS FAMILIES AGREE WITH EUCOMMIA ARE PRINTED IN HEAVY TYPE.

CHARACTERS	MONOCHLAMYDEAE							DIALYPETALEAE
	URTICALES					TRICOCCAE	HAMAMELIDALES	POLYCARPICAE
	EUCOMMIACEAE	ULMACEAE	MORACEAE	CANNABACEAE	URTICACEAE	EUPHORBIACEAE	HAMAMELIDACEAE	TROCHODENDRACEAE (sensu Van Tieghem)
Habit	**Shrubs or trees**	**Shrubs or trees**	**Shrubs or trees**, seldom herbs	Herbaceous	Mostly herbs, seldom shrubs or trees	**Shrubs or trees**, seldom herbs	**Shrubs or trees**	**Shrubs or trees**
Distribution	**China**	Tropics and subtropics **(also China)**	Tropics and subtropics **(also China)**	Tropics and subtropics **(also China)**	Mostly tropics: N. America, Asia, Malaya, Africa, Europe	Trop., subtrop. and temp. **(also China)**	Mostly **Central and S. China**, subtropical and extratropical Asia, N. America and S. Africa	S. Japan
Stem								
Cortex	**Homogeneous, collenchyma present**	**Collenchyma present** (e. g. *Ulmus*), *Celtis* shows sclereids, outer layer silicified	**Collenchyma present**, often sclereids or continuous sclerenchyma band	**Collenchyma present** (*Cannabis*)	**Collenchyma present**	**Collenchyma strongly developed** in *Hippomaneae*, *Crotoneae* and *Euphorbieae*, later on sclereids	**Collenchyma** and sclereids **often present**	Cavities and branched sclereids present
Suberization	**Epidermal**	Subepidermal	Subepidermal	?	Subepidermal, in *Urtica* deeper in the cortex	**Epidermal** or subepidermal	Subepidermal	Superficial
Pericycle	**Sclerenchyma in early stages absent, after 3 years present in an almost continuous uniform band**	Continuous band of sclerenchyma mixed with stone cells or isolated sclerenchyma bands	Long sclerenchyma fibres in isolated strands	Long sclerenchyma fibres present (*Cannabis*)	Long sclerenchyma fibres (to 22 cm) in isolated strands	Only primary sclerenchyma fibres present or continuous band of sclerenchyma mixed with stone cells	Mostly continuous band of sclerenchyma mixed with stone cells (except in *Liquidambar* and *Altingia*)	Continuous band of sclerenchyma mixed with stone cells
Secondary phloem	**Interspersed with sclerenchyma bands**	**Interspersed with sclerenchyma bands**	**Interspersed with sclerenchyma bands**	**Interspersed with sclerenchyma bands**	**Interspersed with sclerenchyma fibres**	**Sclerenchyma present** or absent, sometimes sieve tubes absent (*Hippomaneae*)	**Sclerenchyma seldom present** (e. g. *Distylium*)	Sclerenchyma absent
Secondary xylem	**Vessels present, isolated, uniformly distributed, tertiary spiral bands present, simple vascular perforation in secondary xylem, scalariform perforation in primary xylem**	Vessels present, almost exclusively simple vascular perforation (except *Planera*)	Vessels present, walls spirally thickened (*Morus*), lumen alternately wide and narrow, simple vascular perforation	Vessels present, mostly isolated, simple vascular perforation	Isolated vessels present (to 80 μ wide), simple vascular perforation	Vessels present, simple vascular perforation (*Hippomaneae* and *Joannesieae*) or simple perforations combined with scalariform perforations	Isolated narrow vessels present, scalariform vascular perforation	Vessels absent, tracheids with scalariform bordered pits
	Libriform with bordered pits, xylem rays uni- or biseriate	**Libriform with bordered pits**, xylem rays multiseriate (3—7 cells wide)	**Libriform with bordered pits, xylem rays to 7 cells wide, sometimes 1—2 cells wide**	**Libriform with bordered pits, xylem rays uni- or biseriate in *Cannabis***	Libriform with simple pits, xylem rays wide or narrow	**Libriform** with simple pits, sometimes **with bordered pits, xylem rays narrow**	**Libriform with bordered pits, xylem rays uni- or biseriate**	Primary xylem rays 2—4 cells wide, **secundary xylem rays uniseriate**
Pith	**Homogeneous, in older stages a central cavity is present**	Homogeneous	**Homogeneous** (*Ficus*)	**Homogeneous, in mature internodes a central cavity is present**	**A central cavity present in *Urtica***	Homogeneous or heterogeneous	**Homogeneous** (except in 2 *Liquidambar* species)	Heterogeneous (cavities and branched sclereids present)
Leaf								
Phyllotaxis	**Spiral, 2/5—3/8, later on pseudo-distichous**	Distichous, **topmost leaves of flowering branches spiral**	± Distichous or almost decussate (originally spiral?)	Decussate or distichous, in *Cannabis* **originally spiral (2/5)**	Decussate, distichous or spiral	**Alternate** or decussate	Mostly distichous	Distichous
Shape	**Simple, pinnate, asymmetrical, serrate, teeth with glandular cells**	**Simple, pinnate, asymmetrical, serrate, teeth sometimes with secretory cells**	**Simple, pinnate** or palmate, entire or **serrate**	**Simple** or compound, palmate, serrate, **teeth with glandular cells**	Simple, pinnate, entire, serrate or dentate	**Mostly simple** or compound, sometimes **teeth with glandular cells** (*Hippomaneae*)	**Simple**	**Simple, serrate**
Stipules	**Absent**	Present	Present	Present	Present	Present	Mostly present	**Absent**
Stomata	**Auxiliary cells present, cuticular folds**	**Sometimes auxiliary cells, cuticular folds.**	Auxiliary cells absent	Auxiliary cells absent	**Often auxiliary cells**	**Auxiliary cells present** or absent, **cuticular folds**	**Auxiliary cells 4 or 2**	Auxiliary cells absent
Petiole	**1 leaf trace**	**Mostly 1 leaf trace**, sometimes 3 (*Gironniera*)	?	3 leaf traces in *Cannabis*, 7 leaf traces fuse into one in *Humulus*	Isolated leaf traces	?	Sometimes 3 leaf traces (*Liquidambar*)	3 leaf traces
Inflorescence	♂ **in small axillary fascicles**, ♀ **solitary**	Axillary pseudo-corymbs or ♀ **solitary**	**Cymose**, capitulate or cup-like pseudo-umbels	**Cymose**, panicles, capitula or amenta	Pseudo-corymbs, pseudo-spikes or pseudo-capitula, **seldom solitary**	Spikes, panicles, **axillary fascicles** or cyathia	Spikes, racemes or capitula	Pseudo-racemes
Flower								
Sex	**Unisexual, dioecious, flowers show no trace of the other sex**	**Mostly unisexual**, often rudiments of the other sex, seldom bisexual (*Ulmus*) or polygamous	**Unisexual, dioecious** or monoecious	**Unisexual, dioecious**	**Mostly unisexual, dioecious or monoecious**, pistil rudiment in ♂ flowers, seldom bisexual	**Unisexual, dioecious** or monoecious	Bisexual, polygamous or **unisexual**, monoecious, **seldom dioecious**	Bisexual
Perianth (parts of)	**Absent**	(8—7—6—)5—4(—3), theoretically in two whorls	(6—)4(—2), **sometimes absent**	5	5—4(—3—2)	**Absent**, simple or double	5—4, **seldom absent**	**Absent**
Stamens	**(10—)8(—6), free, anthers elongate and apiculate**	(8—7—6—)5—4(—3), connective indistinct	(6—)4(—2)	5	5—4(—3—2), epitepalous	∞ (300)—1, in *Hippomaneae* mostly 3—2	2 whorls of 5—4 stamens, inner one often staminodial, **connectives apiculate**	∞, in the lower part of the spiral the filaments are connate, connectives not apiculate
Pistil								
Carpels	**2 connate**	**2 connate**	**2 connate**	**2 connate**	**2 connate**	Mostly 3, **connate**	2 connate (seldom 3)	(8—7—)6(—5), greater part connate
Ovary	**1 cell developed, 1 cell abortive**	**1 cell developed, 1 cell abortive**	**2 cells**, both or **only 1 developed**	**1 cell developed, 1 cell abortive**	**1 cell developed, 1 cell abortive**	20-celled in *Hura*, mostly 3-celled, sometimes 4—2 celled, **seldom 1-celled**	2-celled	Many-celled
Ovules	**2 (1 sterile) in the developed cell, apical, anatropic, 2 integuments**	1, apical, anatropic, 2 integuments	1, apical, anatropic, seldom basal, 2 integuments	1, apical, campylotropous, 2 integuments	1, basal, atropic, 2 integuments	2 or 1 in each cell, apical, anatropic, obturator present, 2 integuments	∞ — 1, apical, anatropic, 2 integuments	∞, apical, anatropic 2 integuments
Styles	**Absent**	**Linear**, seldom 4—2-fid	2 or 1, linear, **seldom absent**	2, cylindrical or absent	1 or absent	Free or ± connate	2, long, free, narrow	(8—7—)6(—5), free
Stigmata	2, free, papillate	2, free, papillate	2, papillate	2, linear, papillate	Sessile or not sessile, papillate	Mostly 3, often papillate	2, free, punctiform	Each style with 1 stigma
Fruit								
Type	**Samara**	**Samara**, nut or drupe	Nut or drupaceous	Capsule or nut	Nut or drupe	Capsule, seldom berry or drupe	2-celled capsule	Capsule
Number of seeds	**1**	**1**	**1**	**1**	**1**	**2 or 1 in each cell**	**Mostly 1**	∞
Seed								
Embryo	**Large (length is that of endosperm), straight, cotyledons narrow, flat**	Straight or curved	Often curved	Curved	**Straight**	**Straight** or curved, **cotyledons broad, flat**, thin	**Straight**, radicle small, cotyledons foliaceous	Small
Endosperm	**Present, thin**	Absent, **seldom present**	**Present** or absent	**Present**, fleshy, containing oil	**Present**, mostly strongly developed, containing oil	**Present**, strongly developed, containing oil	**Present, thin**	**Present**, containing oil
Latex elements	**Unicellular unbranched tubes formed below the stem vegetation-point, additional tubes formed by the cambium, present troughout the plant also in the roots**	Absent, cells containing mucilage occur in the leaf and in the bark, but they are not tubiform	**Present, unicellular tubes**, originate in a definite number in the embryo, branches push into other parts of the plant (e. g. into the secondary phloem), resin ducts and mucilage containing cells present	**Present, unicellular unbranched tubes originate below the stem vegetation-point**, tubes not formed by the cambium, absent in the roots	**Present, similar to those of the *Cannabaceae***	**Present**, often multicellular (e. g. *Johannesieae*) or **unicellular** (e. g. *Hippomaneae*), in the last-named case the tubes originate in a definite number in the embryo and are strongly branched, lysigenous mucilage canals and secretion of resin and oil present	Absent, resin ducts in *Altingia* and *Liquidambar*	Absent
Hairs	**Simple, unicellular, silicified, walls with thickenings**	**Simple, unicellular**, conical, **walls often silicified** or calcified or with calcified thickenings	**Simple, unicellular**, conical, **walls often silicified**	**Simple, unicellular**, often with cystoliths, walls calcified or **silicified**, sometimes only at the top	**Simple, unicellular, often silicified at the top**	Mostly stellate, fascicled or squamate, sometimes unicellular (e. g. *Hippomaneae*)	Multicellular, stellate or fascicled, simple, unicellular (in *Liquidambar*)	Absent
Calcium oxalate	**Absent**	Present	Present	Present	Present	Present	Present	Present
Calcium carbonate	**Present**	**Present** in cystoliths, heartwood and pith (in 2 genera)	**Present** in cystoliths	**Present** in cystoliths	**Present** in cystoliths and in the basis of the hair walls	Absent?	Absent?	Absent?
Silica	**Present**	**Present**	**Present**	**Present**	**Present**	**Sometimes present**	Absent?	Absent
Tannin	**Present**	**Present**	**Present** in idioblasts	**Present**	?	**Mostly present** (often in xylem rays)	Present	?


MIANGAS
9
G.LIMONA 25
G.BATOE 110
MIANGAS
TO NENOESA
FROM BEO
MIANGAS 1:200.000
FROM MIANGAS
11
GARETE
10
MERAMPI
KARATON
MENGKOPOE
NENOESA ISL.
INTATA
MAROH
KAKELOTAN
TO MOROTAI
TO MIANGAS
KARAKELONG
TATAMBOEWE
G. DOEATA 1400
2
G.MANOEK
K.BAHEWA
N.MARALOEM
PASIR MALAP
G. AJAMANA
LOBO
BEO
1
FROM SANGIHE
8
DAHAN
POELOETAN
G.TARAPAHAN
7
G. PIAPI 520
G. SINAMBOENG
BOWOMBAROE
KIAMA
SALEBABOE
G.AJAMBANA 400
3
LIROENG
6
MORONGE
SALEBABOE
4
G.LOEATAN 220
5
1300
G.PADIAN
MANGARANG
KABOEROEANG
FROM NENOESA
1090
B. PANGEO
P. RADE
WAJABOELA
MOROTAI
TO TERNATE
PILOWO
910
B.SABATAI
12
GOEGOETI
MARILAKO
MOROTAI 1:1.500.000
LEGENDA: ROUTE
BY STEAMSHIP
" NATIVE PROA
TRAILS
1-12 COLLECTING AREAS
HEIGHTS IN METERS
VILLAGES
CAMPS
G. GUNONG (MOUNTAIN)
P. PULAU (ISLAND)
K. KUALA (RIVER)
TALAUD ISL. 1 625.000

where the N. I. Forestry Survey carried out intensive local explorations, during which several representatives of the Papuan element were discovered (cf. Lam, 1938, 144—155), which were not yet known from the interjacent regions (N.E. Celebes or Banggai, Peleng, Soela, Boeroe, Ceram). It would, therefore, be worth while to have these islands more thoroughly explored in a near future.

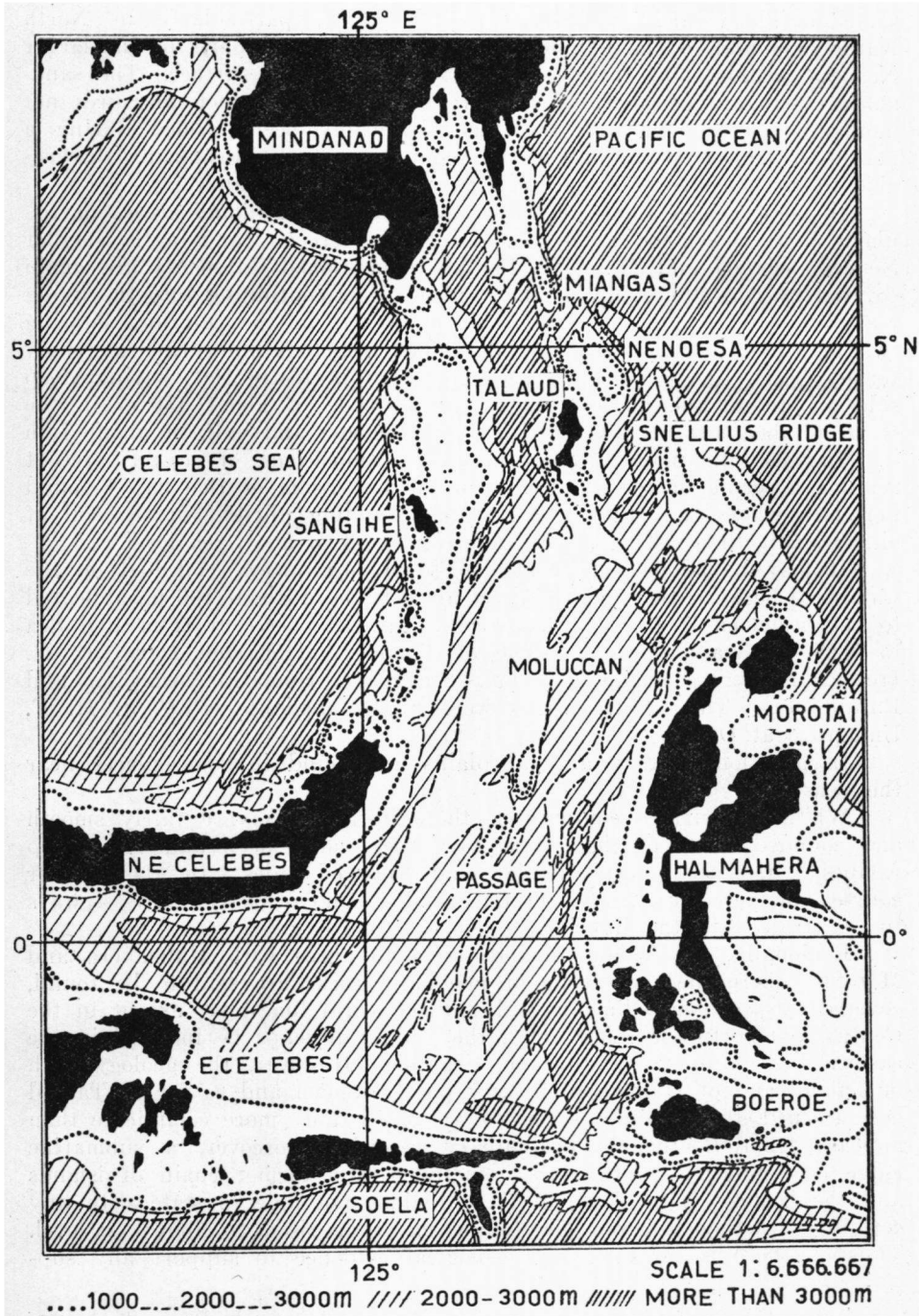
2. GEOLOGY.

In contradistinction to the Sangihe Islands, which form a chain of purely volcanic islands of recent date, the Talaud Islands show no volcanic phenomena whatsoever. According to Roothaan, who made a first preliminary geological exploration of the group in 1921, and from whose publication most of the following data are taken, they seem to represent the remainder of a former connection between S.E. Mindanao and N. Halmahera. This opinion seems to be corroborated by the splendid work of the Snellius Expedition of 1929—1930. As is shown by the map (*Fig. 2*) taken from Van Riel's paper (Pl. II) the Talaud Islands, Miangas inclusive, are indeed in the north linked up with Mindanao by a submarine ridge. To the south "the Talaud ridge follows the centre of the Moluccan passage and joins up to the east arm of Celebes. A second arm of the latter ridge, the Snellius ridge, brings about a connection with Morotai and Halmahera" (Kuenen l. c. 187). It is true that these ridges lie 1300 and 2500 m below the present sea-level respectively, but anyhow their structure may mean that there is no indication of any direct connection either with the Sangihe ridge or with N.E. Celebes (although the Talaud ridge runs very close to the Minahasa coast) and that, as far as geological evidence is concerned, there may have been, on the whole, a better chance for the eastern flora element, both through Halmahera and Morotai and through the E. Celebes—Soela-ridge. In § 5 we will see, in how far this is corroborated by phytogeographical evidence.

The Talaud Islands consist of a basis of igneous rocks (diorite, gabbro and periodite), covered by relatively thin veneer of sediments. The igneous rocks are partly of Mesozoic, partly perhaps of Tertiary age. They reach the surface mainly in two coastal areas in North Karakelong, one in the extreme northwest, and a somewhat larger one in the northeast, and furthermore in the centre and at a part of the east coast of the narrower southern half of the island (G. Piapi!), in some very small portions of central Salebaboe and in a large part of the centre of Kaboeroeang. The small G. Batoe ridge on Miangas is probably likewise a denuded part of this geanticline.

Immediately covering these rocks are thin layers of siliceous schists of probably Mesosoic age. Apart from breccia of local importance probably originating from a period of regression of unknown age, these schists are covered by younger, probably Tertiary sediments (marl and

Fig. 2. — Submarine morphology of the region between the Philippines, North Celebes and the northern Moluccas (Morotai, Halmahera, Boeroe) after the chart by P. M. van Riel. For further explanation see text.


125° E
MINDANAO
PACIFIC OCEAN
MIANGAS
5°
NENOESA
5° N
TALAUD
SNELLIUS RIDGE
CELEBES SEA
SANGIHE
MOLUCCAN
MOROTAI
N.E. CELEBES
PASSAGE
HALMAHERA
0°
0°
E.CELEBES
BOERO
SOELA
125°
SCALE 1: 6.666.667
....1000___2000___3000m //// 2000-3000m ////// MORE THAN 3000m

sandstone), several hundreds of metres thick, particularly in North Karakelong and in North Salebaboe. Also the central parts of the larger Nenoesa islands show these sedimentary rocks at the surface. The sandstone layers are considerably thicker than the marl which measures not more than a few metres. Both have probably been formed during a period of transgression, but neither contain any macroscopically discernable fossils, except occasional remains of carbonized plants.

In many places along the coast and also in some inland areas (particularly in S. Salebaboe, in W., N. and E. Kaboeroeang and in the smaller Nenoesa islands and Miangas) the above-mentioned sediments are again covered by coral-limestone. In most places it is continuing into the living reef although it may be considerably uplifted in the interior, showing two or three terraces with well-developed sea-cliffs indicating as many former beach lines. These terraces are often perfectly flat, having steep sides. I found the highest one at an altitude of about 150 m in the south (Kaboeroeang), of about 75 m in Nenoesa and only of about 7 m in Miangas. In many places there are indications of a very recent relative lowering of the sea-level. On the north-side of Beo bay I found perfectly whole and entire coral trunks standing upright in the soil of an abraded cliff-coast at an altitude of 2.5—3 m above sea-level.

It may be added here that two fossil coral-pieces, collected on the watershed between Beo and Rainis at an altitude of about 100 m, appeared to be specimens of *Cyphastraea serailia* Forssk.[1]) (recent from Red Sea to N.W. Australia; plio-plistocene of Timor) and *Fungia Danai* E. H. (recent from Madagascar, Ceylon, Singapore, Sumatra, Amboina and Philippines). The identifications were kindly made by Prof. J. H. F. Umbgrove at Delft.

In addition, marshy alluvial plains are found in some places near the coast.

While the surface contours of the eruptive rocks are fairly smooth and rounded, those of the sedimentary rocks show deep and very steep ravines with often perpendicular and polished sides. In their lower course, however, the rivers offer the usual — and often the only — ways to penetrate into the interior.

Regionally, the Talaud Islands seem to agree with Halmahera and Morotai, where the same type of magmatic rocks are said to be found, covered by younger sediments and uplifted coral limestone, except in the Central part. On the other hand, they might perhaps be inserted in the eastern branch of the Philippine virgation. However, the geology both of Talaud and of Halmahera is very poorly known and as far as Talaud is concerned, the structure seems to be considerably more complicate than appears from Roothaan's preliminary records. Moreover, a submarine ridge may and may not be the remainder of a former chain of islands and the geology is, at least in these regions not able to state with any certainty whether a given geanticline has ever risen to above sea-level. Thusfar, there is no sufficient geological evidence to support any sup-

[1]) Forsskål, not Forskål, as the name is usually spelled (letter by Dr. K. Stephensen, Zoological Museum, Kopenhagen).

positions regarding former land connections in these parts, let alone to fix the period of their eventual existence, and any conclusions in this field are premature.

3. CLIMATE AND VEGETATION.

The climate is purely tropical. According to Boerema (Verh. 18, p. 52) both Talaud and Morotai belong to rainfall type nr. 59 with a fairly strong rainfall throughout the year and a weak minimum in the northern summer. The rainfall figures given in his paper of 1931 show that the yearly rainfall for Beo (Karakelong, west coast) is 3428 mm (average of 12 years) with a minimum of 204 mm in August and a maximum of 367 mm in December. For Liroeng (Salebaboe, north coast) the yearly rainfall is 2817 mm (average of 31 years) with a minimum of 187 mm in September and a maximum of 352 mm in June. For Wajaboela (Morotai, west coast) the yearly rainfall is 1911 mm (average of 10 years) with minimum of 82 mm in October and a maximum of 245 mm in January. In Talaud the figures may be slightly higher in the hilly interior, in Morotai they will undoubtedly be considerably higher in the mountains than in Wajaboela, as the mountain range ascends much higher than in Talaud. Yet, during the 18 days spent in the interior of North Karakelong, it rained several times, in fact almost every second day, whilst there had been no rain at all at the coast.

Both in Talaud and in Morotai the prevailing winds are north from December to April inclusive, south from June to October inclusive (Boerema, Verh. 18, map II).

In accordance with the equable rainfall and temperature throughout the year — of the latter no exact figures were available — the natural vegetation is the tropical rain forest. It covers the country up to the hill tops, which in Talaud do not surpass the 600 m contour.

Probably as a consequence partly of edaphic factors, partly of floristic differences, the forest in Talaud is not more than moderately heavy and, in general, not higher than about 30—35 m, interspersed with occasional lofty trees, whereas the Morotai forest generally attains a height of 40 or 50 m, with many heavy trees.

My original impression of the Talaud rain forest was that it is relatively poor in species. Yet, in the region which was most intensively investigated, the collection from the old forest, including the river banks, contained 229 species of which no less than 110 trees (cf. *Table I*). Probably the impression of poorness is influenced by the vegetational aspect of the forest. In general, the undergrowth is not very dense, the number of shrubs being very low. Rattans are locally abundant, particularly on the narrow ridges. Terrestrial *Araceae* and particularly epiphytical orchids are remarkably rare, but in comparison with the larger Malaysian islands also the fern flora is rather poor, though probably more so in specimens than in species. Among the epiphytes *Myrmecodia* and *Hydnophytum* are pretty well represented. Also lianas are fairly abundant. Bamboo is very rare. In some of the swamps sagu (*Metroxylon* spec.) is found, both spiny and spineless.

TABLE I.

Number of species belonging to seven life-forms in three localities.

	Trees	Shrubs	Lianes and climbers	Epiphytes	Hemi-parasytes	Herbs and undershrubs	Saprophytes	Total
Talaud, old forest Loc. 2 (hills and riverbanks) — 18 collecting days	110	7	31	25 (12 Pter., 3 Orch.)	4	46 (15 Pter., 4 Orch.)	6	229
Talaud, sec. forest nr. Beo Loc. 1	27	19	15	2	3	16 (2 Pter.)	—	82
Morotai, old forest Loc. 12 (hills and riverbanks) — 11 collecting days	71	23	20	28 (12 Pter., 12 Orch.)	1	40 (18 Pter., 2 Orch.)	—	183

During my stay in the interior of North Karakelong, relatively few trees were flowering, but there were many young flowerbuds and also many fruits. This is the reason why several tree species had ultimately to be collected in a sterile state. Maybe there is a flowering time in February, and possibly another in July, if there is actually a distinct general periodicity in this respect.

In the limestone areas, where the humus layer is often very thin, the forest is distinctly different. Several trees, and among them are many which yield economically important timber, such as the valuable ebony tree (*Diospyros Rumphii*), are preferring these soils or exclusively occur there. The undergrowth in these forests is extremely scanty.

A very peculiar type of vegetation is found on the eastern slope of G. Piapi on the east coast of Karakelong, where the layer of weathered soil on the eruptiva is so thin that forest growth is prevented in many places. As far as could be ascertained this is the only example of such a deviating vegetation (and flora) in the whole group. It has given rise to some interesting folklore and has previously been dealt with in a separate paper (1927) in which the vegetation above 150 m alt. was described as recalling the subalpine flora of high mountain peaks, intermixed with coastal species. The name of this remarkable mountain has occasionally been connected with some former volcanic activity (api = fire). As no traces of such an activity have been found — the Talaud word for fire is, moreover, not "api", which is Malay, but "poetoeng'a" —

it is more likely that the name has been derived from the native name of a plant, reminding the inhabitants of certain seashore plants called *api-api* (Piapi may be an abbreviation of api-api), on account of the fact that some of the mangrove trees are generally used for fire wood.

On account of the nature of the coast, in which estuaries of some importance are lacking, the mangrove vegetation is poorly developed. Near Beo there are some plots of *Rhizophora, Bruguiera, Ceriops* and *Avicennia,* but for the rest the most common coastal tree is *Sonneratia caseolaris,* mixed with some other trees, a community which seems to occur particularly on the small capes that protrude into the see. Between these the usual *Pes-caprae* and *Barringtonia* associations are found.

In Talaud the deforestation is not yet very serious (1926). As a consequence of the poor soil the islands are sparsely populated. The villages are all situated near the coast and the interior is mostly forested, at least in Karakelong. Only in the narrow central part of the island at the latitude of Beo, and furthermore on the smaller islands, most of the forest has been cleared. Particularly in the broader northern section of Karakelong the forest seems to be practically virginal as a consequence of the fact that forest products are not (or no longer) collected. The inhabitants are indolent and do not like to leave their villages even for a few nights. This is undoubtedly partly due to the fact that the main food (*Ipomoea Batatas* and *Colocasia*) is heavy and not easy to be taken into the forest in considerable quantities for a long time. Near the villages certain plots are, since 1925, protected by a native government regulation as timber reserves. Culling permits are granted for particular quantities and for particular species. In Salebaboe and in Kaboeroeang there are only some small groves left on the highest points of the hills. The Nenoesa Islands are entirely deforested except Garete, which is an uninhabited flat coral island, which serves as an already badly cleared timber reserve for the group. In Miangas there is only a very small grove on G. Kota which is preserved as a sort of sanctuary with the ruins of an ancient fortress in which some small memorial guns are worshipped.

Near Beo the secondary forest is relatively rich. It was not particularly intensively investigated, yet I collected there 82 species, of which 27 trees (cf. *Table I*). This forest is comparatively rich in shrubs and climbers, but extremely poor in epiphytics.

In the other islands the secondary forests appeared to be much poorer. Floristic characteristics of the various associations are given in § 4.

Probably due to the scanty contact with other islands, the introduced and ruderal flora elements are still very poor. *Lantana Camara* L., which in the Minahasa was (in 1926) restricted to the immediate vicinity of Manado, had at that time not yet appeared in Talaud. Significant for the place, some of the introduced plants have come from, is the native name given to me for *Ageratum conyzoides,* viz. *radóé'oet oe manáro,* i. e. weed from Manado (capital of the Minahasa, North Celebes). Other introduced and (or) ruderal plants are *Abelmoschus moschatus, Achyranthes aspera, Asclepias curassavica, Cassia mimosoides, Emilia sonchifolia, Hyptis capitata, Scoparia dulcis, Sida* (? *rhombifolia* L.), *Stachytarpheta*

indica, Urena lobata L., *Vernonia cinerea,* etc. The name of *Melastoma malabathricum* L. was noted by me at the time, but on second thought I am not sure it was this species I observed and not *M. polyanthum* which was collected afterwards.

As has been said above, the Morotai rain forest is very different from that in Talaud. It is much more majestic and exuberant in aspect, and possibly also in species, although this does not appear from *Table I.* It must, however, be borne in mind that I had only 11 collecting days in Morotai, against 18 in the main Talaud collecting area (Loc. 2). Moreover, a relatively larger number of Morotai species (± 50 out of ± 230) had to remain unidentified (in Talaud ± 100 out of ± 710).

The Morotai forest reminded me in many respects of the New Guinea sylva, but it is true that such psychological factors as the more Papua-like inhabitants, the avifauna, particularly the many cacatoos, hornbills and dull-cooing pigeons and the great number of enormous and heavily buttressed trees influenced this impression. The undergrowth is very dense, ferns and particularly *Selaginella* are extremely abundant. Also epiphytical Orchids are frequent and these are certainly points the country has in common with New Guinea. The swampy alluvial plains behind the beach are full of sagu. On drier grounds several very lofty trees (cf. § 4) are predominant. Next comes a narrow stretch of limestone hills (G. Ligòjer) with some characteristic trees and, finally, there is the gradual slope of the central mountain range, in which yet other lofty trees, among which the gum copal tree (*Agathis* spec.), are abundant.

4. FLORISTIC CHARACTERISTICS OF THE AREAS INVESTIGATED.

In the following enumeration the species have been mentioned in alphabetical order. The main subdivision is a geographical one, beginning with the main island of Talaud, Karakelong, proceeding with Salebaboe, Kaboeroeang, Nenoesa and Miangas, and ending with Morotai. The next subdivision used is based on the habitats within the localities and the ultimate one is according to life forms, in the sequence: trees, shrubs, lianas and climbers, epiphytes, hemiparasites, herbs and undershrubs, saprophytes, and occasionally fungi.

An exclamation mark indicates that the species was noted to be frequent or very frequent. Of trees with a height of 10 m or more, the dimension is added in brackets. Unless ± is added to this figure, the height is actually measured. In case two figures are given, that with ± is the maximum estimated height observed for the species in question. If a species was collected more than once in the same locality, only the height of the highest specimen is given.

An * asterisk means that a species has been observed only at a locality, not collected. This generally applies only to trees, the native name of which was mentioned at my request by the native expert. As far as this was possible on account of previously acquired experience in the field, the identification thus obtained was checked. Only those species have been mentioned in this way, the native names of which had

proved to be constant and reliable by repeated counter-checking (cf. § 7). However, it hardly needs special emphasis that the data obtained by this method should be used with some reserve.

In some cases author's names are added. These species are wanting in the collection.

Karakelong.

LOC. 1, VICINITY OF BEO.

Sandy beach — Trees: **Cerbera manghas, Ficus procera* (± 30 m), *Pongamia pinnata* — Shrubs: *Aegiceras corniculatum, Clerodendrum inerme, *Pluchea indica Less., Premna corymbosa, Scaevola frutescens, Ximenia americana* — Herbs: *Ipomoea Pes-caprae.*

Secondary forest behind the beach — Shrubs: *Clerodendrum Buchanani, Evodia latifolia, Wedelia biflora!* — Lianas: *Parsonsia Cumingiana, Stephania hernandiifolia* — Herbs: *Crinum asiaticum, Tacca leontopetaloides.*

Mangrove Vegetation — Trees: *Avicennia marina var. Rumphiana! (± 15 m), Bruguiera conjugata!, Ceriops Roxburghiana, Rhizophora mucronata!;* only on slightly elevated coral reef: *Osbornia octodonta, Sonneratia caseolaris! (15 m)* — Shrubs: *Brownlowia Beccarii* — Lianas: *Dalbergia candenatensis!, D. meneoides, Derris heterophylla* — Herbs: *Acanthus ilicifolius, Acrostichum aureum, Mariscus pennatus* (landside) — Epiphytes: *Dendrobium Mirbelianum* (! on *Sonneratia*).

Freshwater swamp — Trees: *Barringtonia racemosa* — Shrubs: *Desmodium heterocarpum* — Herbs: *Aclisia sorzogonensis, Floscopa scandens, Hygrophila salicifolia, *Jussieua angustifolia, Polypodium longissimum.*

Coconut plantations — Shrubs and herbs: *Ageratum conyzoides, Bidens chinensis, Blumea balsamifera, B. lacera, Commelina nudiflora, Cyanotis axillaris, Dryopteris unita, Emilia sonchifolia, *Imperata cylindrica (L.) Beauv. var. Koenigii (Retz) Benth., *Leea javanica, Lygodium scandens, Schizoloma ensifolium, Vernonia cinerea* — Epiphytes: *Cyclophorus adnascens.*

Waysides — Shrubs and herbs: *Abelmoschus moschatus, Coelorhachis glandulosa, Cyperus spec. (n. 2513), Eragrostis unioloides!, Gleichenia linearis!, Hyptis capitata, Ischaemum muticum, I. polystachyum!, Jussieua linifolia, Lycopodium cernuum, Paspalum longifolium, Piper sarmentosum, *Rubus fraxinifolius ssp. celebicus, Scleria scrobiculata, Scoparia dulcis, *Sida (? rhombifolia L.), Stachytarpheta indica, *Urena lobata L., Vernonia lanceolata, *Wedelia biflora.*

Secondary forest (0—120 m alt.) — Trees: *Albizzia saponaria, Boerlageodendron serratifolium, Buchanania arborescens (20 m), Cerbera manghas (10 m), Commersonia Bartramia!, Evodia latifolia!, Ficus botryocarpa, Garcinia sizygifolia, Geniostoma celebicum, Geunsia pentandra!, Glochidion zeylanicum var. malayanum, Gnetum gnemon var. domesticum, *Hibiscus tiliaceus, Homalanthus populneus, Leucosyke capitellata!, Macaranga hispida, M. Tanarius, Maesa tetrandra!, Mallotus ricinoides, Melanolepis multiglandulosa, Melicope triphylla, Melochia umbellata, Nauclea*

*mitragyna, *Oroxylon indicum Vent., Parkia javanica, *Premna corymbosa, Rhus rufa (10 m), Trema amboinensis* — Shrubs: *Acalypha amentacea!, Allophylus Cobbe!, Baccaurea spec. (n. 2657), Breynia cernua, Dalbergia ferruginea, Desmodium heterocarpum, Ehretia microphylla, Ficus leucantatoma, Ixora talaudensis, Leea javanica, Mallotus tiliifolius, Melastoma polyanthum, Morinda citrifolia, Mussaenda aff. philippica!, Pisonia umbellifera, Premna corymbosa!, Rubus fraxinifolius ssp. celebicus* — Lianas and climbers: *Cissus spec. (n. 2484), Clematis aristata, Dioscorea oppositifolia, Ficus celebica, Ipomoea tiliacea, Lygodium borneense, L. circinnatum, Medinilla pterocaula, Merremia peltata, Mucuna gigantea, Pericampylus glaucus, Piper abbreviatum, P. spec. (n. 2681), Stephania cauliflora* — Epiphytes: *Dischidia Copelandii, Myrmecodia spec. (n. 2549)* — Hemiparasites: *Amyema celebica, Ginalloa Arnottiana!, Scurrula fusca* — Herbs and undershrubs: *Alpinia pectinata!, A. pubiflora!, Centotheca latifolia!, Costus speciosus!, Elatostema polioneurum, Fimbristylis miliacea, Hemigraphis Rumphii var. angustifolia, Ilysanthes antipoda, Ischaemum muticum, Jussieua angustifolia, Nephrolepis biserrata, Ophiorrhiza spec. (n. 2566), Peristrophe bivalvis, Riedelia curviflora, Schizoloma ensifolium, Spathoglottis plicata.*

Partly cleared old forest (± 100 m alt.) — Trees: *Alphitonia zizyphoides (17 m), Alstonia scholaris! (20 m), Annonacea spec. (15 m, n. 2582), Arthrophyllum diversifolium! (15 m), Artocarpus reticulata (12 m), Barringtonia racemosa!, Boerlageodendron serratifolium, Buchanania arborescens! (34 m), Canarium asperum! (10 m), *Cinnamomum spec., Elaeocarpus dolichostylus (25 m), Eugenia ? fastigiata (12 m), E. panduriformis (20 m), E. spec. (27 m, n. 2623), E. spec. (n. 2632), E. spec. (n. 2665), Ficus heteropoda! (10 m), F. pubinervis (11 m), F. rudis! (15 m), Horsfieldia glabra! (17 m), H. novo-guineensis (20 m), Lepiniopsis ternatensis, Litsea Perrottetii (30 m), Lunasia amara, *Metroxylon spec., *Pandanus (2 sterile species), Pimeleodendron amboinicum (15 m), Pittosporum ferrugineum (11 m), Saurauia spec. (n. 2638), Sterculia Treubii! (20 m), Timonius celebicus* — Shrubs: *Desmofischera monosperma* — Lianas and climbers: *Cissus hastata, *Flagellaria indica, Merremia peltata* (forest skirt), *Myxopyrum ovatum, Piper abbreviatum, Pseudopipturus repandus, Rubiacea spec. (n. 2612), Tylophora Perrottetiana* (forest skirt), *Uncaria spec. (n. 2621)* — Epiphytes: *Hoya sussuela!* — Hemiparasites: *Ginalloa Arnottiana* — Herbs and undershrubs: *Amomum roseum, Aneilema vitiense, Aracea spec. (n. 2625), Homalomena aromatica, Microstylis purpureo-viridis, Ophiorrhiza parviflora, O. spec. (n. 2566), Schizaea dichotoma, S. digitata* — Fungi: *Lentinus Tuber-regium Fries* (with tuber).

LOC. 2, K. BAHEWA AREA.

N. Maraloem (small coral island off Lobo) — Trees: *Pandanus latissimus, Polyscias Rumphiana* — Climbers: *Cayratia japonica* — Hemiparasites: *Cassytha filiformis* — Herbs: *Euphorbia serrulata.*

Lobo, alang-alang field — Herbs and undershrubs: *Cassia mimosoides, Eulophia venosa.*

K. Bahewa, banks and bed in cultivated area

(10—20 m alt.) — Climbers: *Pueraria Thunbergiana* — Herbs: *Cyperus distans, Fimbristylis spec. (n. 3026), Ipomoea gracilis, Kyllinga brevifolia, Panicum Crus-galli, Physalis minima, Saccharum spontaneum, Torulinium ferax.*

River banks K. Bahewa and K. Tatamboewe (20—50 m alt.) — Trees: *Acalypha Caturus (15 m), Albizzia saponaria (12 m), Alsophila glauca, Anthocephalus macrophyllus (15 m), *Boerlageodendron barbatum, Bridelia glauca (14 m), Campnosperma ? oxyrhachis! (22 m), Clerodendrum japonicum, Colona scabra (11 m), Endospermum spec. (24 m, ns. 2728, 2873), Ficus spec. (n. 2721), Glochidion philippicum (20 m), G. zeylanicum var. malayanum (10 m), Gnetum gnemon var. domesticum, Hibiscus tiliaceus, Homalanthus populneus, Koordersiodendron pinnatum (23 m), Leea aculeata!, *Macaranga hispida, *M. spec. (n. 2859), Melochia umbellata, Parkia javanica (13 m), Pipturus incanus, Pygeum latifolium (27 m), Terminalia Copelandii (24 m), Villebrunea rubescens!* — Shrubs: *Acalypha amentacea, Boehmeria clidemioides, Maoutia Puya, *Psychotria leptothyrsa, Rubus fraxinifolius ssp. celebicus, Schefflera ? confinis, *Solanum torvum Sev.* — Lianas and climbers: *Cissus hastata, C. nodosa, *Epipremnopsis spec. (n. 2734), Macropsychanthus dolichobotrys, Mussaenda aff. philippica, *Passiflora quadrangularis L., *Pueraria pulcherrima, Tylophora spec. (n. 2892)* — Epiphytes: *Iaera lanaensis, Medinilla Teysmanni, Polypodium heracleum, *P. punctatum, Pteris melanocaulon, Trichosporum radicans* — Herbs and undershrubs: **Ageratum conyzoides, Alpinia pectinata, Amomum roseum, Angiopteris evecta, Argostemma spec. (n. 2890), Begonia spec. (ns. 2742, 2948, 2966, 2967), Cyrtandra coccinea (3 m), Deeringia polysperma, Dryopteris calcarata* (on rocks), *D. spec. (n. 2786a), Elatostema polioneurum, E. spec. (n. 2809), Garnotia stricta* (on rocks), *Lindsaya gracillima* (on rocks), *Mariscus cyperinus, Nephrolepis biserrata, *Riedelia curviflora, *Saccharum spontaneum, Solanum nigrum, Trichomanes humile* (on rocks).

Pasir Malap, riverbank terraces (20 m alt.) — Trees: *Couthovia celebica! (27 m), *Dracontomelum dao, Eugenia spec. (21 m, n. 2986), Gymnacranthera Ibutii (17 m), Laportea spec. (n. 3007), Litsea Forstenii (14 m), *Mischophloeus paniculatus, Palaquium obtusifolium (36 m), Pisonia umbellifera, Pometia spec. (20 m, n. 2982), Pterospermum celebicum (26 m)* — Lianas and climbers: *Adenia pandurata, Artabotrys macrantha, Connarus spec. (n. 3005), Dischidia spec. (n. 3017), Lophopyxis Maingayi, Macropsychanthus dolichobotrys, Medinilla pterocaula, Pothos Rumphii* — Epiphytes: *Myrmecodia spec. (n. 3020)* — Herbs: *Aglaonema oblongifolium, Aracea spec. (n. 2991), Calanthe spec. (n. 2989), Homalomena aromatica, Mapania spec. (n. 2990), Microstylis talaudensis, Rhaphidophora Korthalsii, Saccharum spontaneum, Schizaea digitata, Tropidia spec. (n. 3001)* — Saprophytes: *Didymoplexis minor var. salmonea, Sciaphila tenella.*

Pasir Malap, hill-forest (20—70 m alt.) — Trees: *Arthrophyllum diversifolium! (12 m), Astronia macrophylla, Canarium balsamiferum!, Cleistanthus myrianthus! (11 m), Codiaeum variegatum var. moluccanum, Cyclostemon littoralis (13 m), Discocalyx silvestris, Dracontomelum dao (21 m), Evodia minahassae (15 m), Glycosmis pentaphylla, Lunasia amara, Otophora fruticosa, Pandanus spec. (n. 2992), Trichospermum eriopodum*

(14 m) — Herbs: *Schizaea digitata* — Saprophytes: *Didymoplexis minor var. salmonea, Sciaphila tenella.*

Pasir Malap, Observed only (river terraces and hills not distinguished) — Trees: **Artocarpus elastica*, **Barringtonia racemosa*, **Bischofia javanica*, **Buchanania arborescens*, **Calophyllum soulattri*, **Campnosperma ? oxyrhachis*, **Elaeocarpus ? dolichostylus*, **Eugenia panduriformis*, **E. spec. (n. 2886)*, **Ficus Minahassae*, **F. variegata*, **Garcinia sizygifolia*, **Geunsia pentandra!*, **Glochidion zeylanicum var. malayanum*, **Gynostylus spec. (ns. 2856, 2906)*, **Horsfieldia glabra*, **Macaranga hispida*, **M. spec. (ns. 2859 = 2894)*, **Palaquium luzoniense*, **Palmarum spec. (n. 2916)*, **Pandanus spec.!*, **Parkia javanica!*, **Pimeleodendron amboinicum*, **Planchonella firma var. microcarpa*, **Pometia pinnata*, **Sterculia Treubii*, **Villebrunea rubescens.*

Tatamboewe camp, recent landslide — Herbs and undershrubs: *Aclisia sorzogonensis, Blumea laciniata, Centotheca latifolia, Cyrtococcum oxyphyllum, Digitaria microbachne, Elatostema spec. (n. 2778), Mariscus cyperinus, Pteris vittata, Solanum torvum.*

Tatamboewe camp, riverbank terraces (50 m alt.) — Trees: *Alangium spec. (24 m, n. 2854)*, **Alstonia scholaris, Boerlageodendron barbatum, Clerodendrum japonicum, Evodia glabra (18 m)*, **Eugenia spec. (n. 2886), Ficus botryocarpa (13 m), F. Minahassae (21 m), F. subulata, Garcinia Morella! (13 m), Inocarpus edulis! (29 m)*, **Koordersiodendron pinnatum, Macaranga hispida! (26 m), Mischophloeus paniculatus, Pometia pinnata! (23 m, ± 30 m), Terminalia spec. (30 m, n. 2824), T. spec. (30 m, n. 2884), Villebrunea rubescens* — Lianas: *Erythropalum scandens, Freycinetia De-Vriesei, Iodes ovalis, Pueraria pulcherrima* — Epiphytes: *Antrophyum callifolium, Appendicula reflexa, Asplenium adiantoides, A. nidus, A. tenerum, Hymenolepis mucronata, Polypodium punctatum, Thelasis micrantha* — Herbs: *Amomum roseum, Aspidium polymorphum!, Hemigraphis ceramensis, Pteris longipinnula!, Riedelia curviflora!* — Saprophytes: *Epipogum roseum.*

Tatamboewe camp, hill-forest (50—250 m alt.) — Trees: *Alsophila glauca*, **Alstonia scholaris, Antidesma spec. (n. 2785), Artocarpus communis! (17 m), A. elastica! (31 m), Astronia macrophylla, Baccaurea javanica, Barringtonia racemosa (17 m), Bischofia javanica! (23 m), Buchanania arborescens (16 m), Calophyllum soulattri (28 m), Canangium odoratum (48 m), Canarium asperum! (12 m), C. balsamiferum (17 m), Cinnamomum celebicum, C. spec. (n. 2903), Cleistanthus myrianthus (15 m), Codiaeum variegatum var. moluccanum, Croton argyratus, Cyathocalyx acuminatus (18 m), Cyclostemon minahassae (15 m), Discocalyx silvestris, Dolicholobium spec. (n. 2812), Duabanga moluccana! (41 m)*, **Elaeocarpus dolichostylus*, **Eugenia panduriformis, E. saligna (28 m), E. spec. (40 m, n. 2886), E. spec. (n. 2940)*, **Evodia ? glabra, Ficus botryocarpa (10 m), F. procera (45 m, ± 60 m), F. variegata (30 m)*, **Garcinia Morella*, **G. sizygifolia, Geunsia pentandra (19 m), Gomphandra javanica (16 m), Gonystylus spec. (30 m, n. 2856), Hernandia ovigera (18 m), Horsfieldia glabra (35 m)*, **Inocarpus edulis, Lepiniopsis ternatensis! (21 m), Leucosyke capitellata! (13 m), Linociera ramiflora, Litsea Forstenii (10 m)*, **Macaranga hispida, M. spec. (ns. 2859 = 2894), Melicope*

*triphylla (12 m), Memecylon costatum, Mezzettia spec. (26 m, n. 2898), Myristica celebica (23 m), Nothaphoebe umbelliflora (40 m), Palaquium luzoniense (46 m), Palmarum spec. (n. 2916), *Pandanus spec.!* (not collected), *Phaleria urens, *Pimeleodendron amboinicum, Planchonella firma var. microcarpa! (22 m), Polyalthia celebica (11 m), *Pometia pinnata!, Rinorea amboinensis, Saurauia spec.! (15 m, n. 2754), S. spec.! (n. 2883), Schuurmansia Theophrasta, Sterculia Treubii! (28 m), Terminalia spec.! (30 m, n. 2824), Turpinia pomifera (23 m)* — Shrubs: *Amaracarpus spec.! (n. 2813), Antidesma Cumingii, Breynia cernua, Psychotria leptothyrsa* — Lianas and climbers: *Adenia pandurata, Asplenium scandens, Calamus spec.* (! on ridges, *ns. 2936, 2937*), *Epipremnopsis spec. (n. 2734), Erythropalum scandens, Ficus lanata, F. recurva, Flagellaria indica, Freycinetia De-Vriesei!, F. spec. (n. 2891), Gnetum cuspidatum, Iodes ovalis, Lindsaya pectinata, Medinilla pterocaula, Pothos Rumphii, Randia multiflora, Scindapsus Cuscuaria, Tournefortia sarmentosa* (forest skirt on landslide), *Tylophora spec. (n. 2892), Uncaria longiflora, Vanieria cochinchinensis* — Epiphytes: *Asplenium adiantoides, A. nidus!, Davallia solida, Dischidia hirsuta, Elatostema spec. (n. 2735), Eria oligotricha, Hoya sussuela, Hydnophytum amboinense, H. inerme, Iaera lanaensis, Lycopodium Phlegmaria, Ophioglossum pendulum, Orchidacea spec. (n. 2804), Schefflera ? ovoidea* — Hemiparasites: *Amyema celebica, A. rigidiflora, Amylotheca stenopetala, Ginalloa Arnottiana* — Herbs and undershrubs: *Calanthe veratrifolia var. lancipetala, Cyrtandra capitellata!, Elatostema spec. (n. 2717), Eulophia squalida, Lindsaya decomposita!, L. tenuifolia, Mapania spec. (n. 2749), Microlepia manilensis, Microstylis talaudensis, Ophiorrhiza parviflora, Peristylus papuanus, Pteris longipinnula, Schizaea dichotoma, Selaginella cupressina, S. involvens!, Staurogyne? spec. (n. 2688), Trichomanes cupressoides!, T. sumatranum!, Xanthophytum spec. (n. 2696)* — Saprophytes: *Epipogum roseum, Epirixanthes elongata, Gymnosiphon spec. (n. 2817), Sciaphila spec. (n. 2865)* — Fungi: *Lentinus Tuberregium Fries.*

LOC. 8, POELOETAN — DAHANG TRAIL (sea-level).

Beach — Climbers: *Parsonsia Cumingiana.*

Waysides — Shrubs: *Fatoua japonica, Graptophyllum pictum* — Lianas: *Faradaya splendens* — Herbs and undershrubs: *Corchorus acutangulus, Echinochloa colonum!, Oldenlandia pterita, Sorghum propinquum!, Sporobolus elongatus!*

LOC. 7, G. PIAPI (magmatic rocks, 50—520 m alt.) [1]).

Field — Trees: *Trema amboinensis.*

Open sunny slope (150—520 m alt.) — Trees: *Alphitonia zizyphoides, Calophyllum Inophyllum!, Fagraea ? ternatana!, Garcinia rhizophoroides!, Glochidion rubrum, Gnetum gnemon var. silvestre, Pandanus tectorius!, Planchonella obovata!, Podocarpus neriifolia!, Psychotria spec. (n. 3252), Rauwolfia amsoniifolia, Tetraplasandra Koordersii!, Zanthoxylum Avicennae!* — Shrubs: *Aglaia spec. (n. 3322), Antirrhoea micro-*

[1]) This list is a correction to that given in my previous paper on G. Piapi (1927).

phylla!, Decaspermum Blancoi!, D. spec. (n. 3278), Eugenia claviflora, Geniostoma celebicum, Ilex paucinervia, Litsea ? accedens!, Myrtella Beccarii!, Phyllanthus lamprophyllus!, Rapanea densiflora, Scaevola micrantha!, Styphelia moluccana!, Vaccinium Vidalii!, Wikstroemia indica! — Lianas and climbers: *Flagellaria indica, Morinda spec. (n. 3270)* — Epiphytes: *Bulbophyllum spec. (n. 3243), Hydnophytum amboinense, Polypodium obtusissimum, Polystachya flavescens* — Hemiparasites: *Amyema celebica, Cassytha filiformis* — Herbs and undershrubs: *Adiantum flabellulatum, Cladium philippinense, C. spec. (n. 3249), Dendrobium dimorphum, D. lancifolium, Dianella coerulea, Gahnia aspera, Polygala glomerata, Schizaea dichotoma, Schizoloma ovatum, Scleria lithosperma!, Selaginella spec. (n. 3240), Spathoglottis plicata, Tapeinidium moluccanum, Themeda gigantea!*

Pananasaran'a grove and adjacent forest (50—350 m alt.) — Trees: **Alphitonia zizyphoides, Alsophila Fenicis, *Alstonia scholaris!, *Arthrophyllum diversifolium, *Artocarpus communis, A. elastica, Astronia macrophylla, Buchanania arborescens (11 m), *Calophyllum soulattri!, *Canarium asperum, Canthium spec. (13 m, ns. 3293, 3310), Cleistanthus myrianthus! (14 m), *Croton laevifolius, Eugenia cymosa, E. ? fastigiata, E. panduriformis! (12 m), Garcinia cornea (10 m), *Gynostylus spec. (ns. 2856, 2906), Helicia spec. (n. 3297), *Horsfieldia glabra, *Lepiniopsis ternatensis, Litsea spec. (11 m, n. 3314), Lunasia amara, Macaranga Mappa (11 m), *M. spec. (ns. 2859 = 2894), Matthaea sancta, Myristica celebica! (10 m), Ormosia calavensis (17 m), *Palaquium luzoniense, *Phaleria urens, Pimeleodendron amboinicum! (11 m), Pittosporum ferrugineum (10 m), *Planchonella firma, P. oxyedra (13 m), Plectronia spec. (n. 3294), Rauwolfia amsoniifolia!, *Rhus rufa, *Saurauia spec.* — Shrubs: *Antidesma Cumingii, Euphorbiacea? spec. (n. 3321), Ixora talaudensis, Psychotria spec. (n. 3306)* — Lianas and climbers: *Alyxia stellata!, Gnetum cuspidatum!, Gynochthodes spec. (n. 3332), Strychnos spec. (n. 3333)* — Epiphytes: *Appendicula reflexa, Myrmecodia spec. (n. 3304), M. spec. (n. 3324), Vittaria elongata* — Hemiparasites: *Ginalloa Arnottiana* — Herbs and undershrubs: *Cyperacea spec. (n. 3318), Lycopodium cernuum, Mapania spec. (n. 3330), Microstylis purpureoviridis, M. trigonopetala.*

Salebaboe.

LOC. 3, VICINITY OF LIROENG.

Cultivated grounds and waysides — Trees: *Maesa tetrandra* — Shrubs: *Alchornea rugosa!, Clerodendrum Buchanani* (cult.), *Uraria lagopodioides* — Lianas and climbers: *Merremia tridentata ssp. hastata, Stephania hernandiifolia* — Herbs and undershrubs: *Adenostemma Lavenia!, Ajuga bracteosa, Asclepias curassivica, Biophytum sensitivum, Hedyotis vestita, Ischaemum muticum, I. polystachyum, Lindernia crustacea, Mollugo pentaphylla!, Oldenlandia biflora!, Schizoloma ensifolium!, Scleria scrobiculata!*

Secondary forest (5—350 m alt.) — Trees: **Acalypha amentacea, Albizzia saponaria!, Champereia manillana! (11 m), Clerodendrum*

*Minahassae!, Colona scabra (13 m), *Commersonia Bartramia, Cordia Myxa!, Crataeva religiosa, Dillenia spec. (n. 3072), Ehretia microphylla!, *Ficus leucantatoma, F. Minahassae!, F. subulata! (12 m), *Geunsia pentandra, *Hibiscus tiliaceus, Leea acuminata!, *Leucosyke capitellata, Micromelum minutum, *Ormosia calavensis, Pleomele spec. (n. 3075)* — Shrubs: *Dalbergia ferruginea!, Deeringia polysperma, Desmodium heterocarpum, Desmofischera monosperma, Ophiorrhiza spec. (n. 3079), *Premna corymbosa* — Lianas and climbers: *Columella corniculata, Gynochthodes spec. (n. 3137), Ipomoea congesta!, Jasminum simplicifolium, Lepistemon urceolatus, Merremia peltata, Uncaria pedicellata* — Hemiparasites: *Scurrula fusca* — Herbs and undershrubs: *Curculigo capitulata!, Donax canniformis, Elatostema polioneurum, Eulophia squalida, Helminthostachys zeylanica, Hemigraphis lanceolata, H. Rumphii var. gracilis, Homalomena aromatica!, Lepidagathis Robinsonii, Peristrophe bivalvis, Pouzolzia zeylanica!*

Partly cleared old forest, G. Ajambana (300—400 m alt.) — Trees: *Aglaia ganggo! (15 m), Alphitonia zizyphoides! (23 m), Blumeodendron paucinervium! (12 m), Boerlageodendron serratifolium!, Canangium odoratum! (28 m), Canarium commune! (30 m), Colona scabra (18 m), Diospyros hebecarpa (15 m), Discocalyx silvestris!, Elaeocarpus spec.! (n. 3120), Elmerrillia ovalis (13 m), Eugenia ? calubcob! (17 m), E. spec.! (15 m, n. 3098), Euonymus javanicus (19 m), Ficus spec.! (n. 3125), Geniostoma celebicum, Gnetum gnemon var. domesticum, Lepiniopsis ternatensis! (12 m), Macaranga ? triloba! (16 m), Millettia spec. (n. 3163), Ormosia calavensis! (19 m), Pimeleodendron amboinicum! (11 m), Pittosporum ferrugineum (17 m), Planchonella firma var. microcarpa! (18 m), Pometia tomentosa (30 m), Pterospermum celebicum! (27 m), Rauwolfia javanica (17 m), Symplocos spec.! (25 m, n. 3097), Terminalia spec.! (17 m, n. 3167), Trichospermum eriopodum (17 m), Turpinia pomifera (20 m), Villebrunea rubescens* — Shrubs: **Alchornea rugosa, Antidesma Cumingii, Desmofischera monosperma, Melastoma polyanthum* (forest skirt), *Mycetia ? javanica, Ophiorrhiza spec. (n. 3079)* — Lianas and climbers: *Epipremnopsis spec. (n. 3143), Ficus spec. (n. 3168), Flagellaria indica!, Humata Gaimardiana, Jasminum suberosum, Millettia spec. (n. 3164), Piper abbreviatum, Psychotria ? sarmentosa, Smilax zeylanica!* — Epiphytes: *Asplenium adiantoides, Cyclophorus adnascens, Davallia solida, Dendrobium talaudense, D. spec. (n. 3171), Lycopodium Phlegmaria* — Herbs and undershrubs: *Aclisia sorzogonensis, Alpinia pectinata!, Amomum roseum, Aracea spec. (n. 3116), Aspidium Leuzeanum* (on bank of rivulet), *A. pentaphyllum, Corymborchis spec. (n. 3064), Hypolytrum spec. (n. 3069), Helminthostachys zeylanica, Homalomena spec. (n. 3115), Lindsaya tenuifolia!, Mapania spec. (n. 3141), Microstylis latifolia, M. talaudensis, M. trigonopetala, Spathoglottis plicata* (on bank of rivulet) — Saprophytes: *Didymoplexis minor var. salmonea, Galeola Kuhlii, Sciaphila spec. (n. 3107).*

Small lakes (Danan Timbalang'a and D. Bindoek'a) — Trees: **Hibiscus tiliaceus, *Macaranga hispida* — Herbs: **Aracea spec. (n. 3116), Helminthostachys zeylanica, Polygonum minus ssp. procerum, Sacciolepis aurita, Wolffia spec. (n. 3163).*

Old forest, G. Ajambana, observed only — Trees: **Albizzia sapo-*

*naria, *Alstonia scholaris, *Anthocephalus macrophyllus, *Arthrophyllum diversifolium, *Bischofia javanica, *Calophyllum soulattri, *Canarium balsamiferum, *Champereia manillana, *Dracontomelum dao, *Duabanga moluccana, *Elaeocarpus dolichostylus, *Eugenia panduriformis, *E. saligna, *E. spec. (ns. 2623, 2841, 2886), *Ficus Minahassae, *F. botryocarpa, *F. procera!, *F. pubinervis, *F. variegata!, *F. spec. (ns. 2528 = 2767 = 2814, 2581 = 2782, 2671), *Geunsia pentandra, *Gonystylus spec. (ns. 2856, 2906), *Horsfieldia glabra!, *Inocarpus edulis, *Leucosyke capitellata, *Macaranga hispida!, *M. spec. (ns. 2859 = 2894), *Mezzettia spec. (n. 2898), *Myristica ? celebica, *Notaphoebe umbelliflora, *Pometia spec. (n. 2982), *Rhus rufa, *Sterculia Treubii, *Terminalia spec. (n. 2884), *Indet. (nat. n.: saroeràn'a, prob. Commersonia Bartramia).*

LOC. 6, LOTA SWAMP NEAR MORONGE (on limestone near sea-coast).

Beach — Trees: *Pisonia silvestris, Tournefortia argentea.*

Drier parts of swamp — Trees: *Barringtonia racemosa!, Dolichandrone spathacea!*

Wetter parts of swamp — Herbs: *Caldesia reniformis!, Ceratophyllum spec. (n. 3229), Dryopteris gongylodes!, Hygrophila salicifolia, Hymenachne amplexicaulis!, Ipomoea aquatica, Jussieua angustifolia, Lemna spec. (n. 3231), Melochia concatenata!, Najas ? graminea Del. (n. 3232), Polygonum minus ssp. procerum!, Wolffia spec. (n. 3230).*

Kaboeroeang.

LOC. 4, TONAN'A AND LAPEAN'A FOREST RESERVES AND TRAILS THERETO.

Secondary forest and waysides — Trees: *Albizzia saponaria!, *Pleomele spec. (n. 3075), *Pterospermum celebicum!* — Shrubs: *Acalypha amentacea!, Alchornea rugosa!, Allophylus Cobbe!, Commersonia Bartramia, Ficus ampelas, Ixora talaudensis, Kleinhovia hospita!, Leea acuminata!, Melanolepis multiglandulosa!, *Morinda citrifolia, *Premna corymbosa* — Lianas and climbers: *Lygodium circinnatum, Piper abbreviatum, Tylophora Perrottetiana* — Herbs and undershrubs: **Cheilanthes tenuifolia, Fatoua pilosa, Nephrolepis hirsutula, Passiflora foetida!, Polypodium phymatodes!*

Partly cleared forest reserve of Tonan'a (limestone, 50—75 m alt.) — Trees: *Arthrophyllum diversifolium! (11 m), Diospyros Rumphii! (17 m), *Elaeocarpus dolichostylus, Garuga floribunda! (12 m), Koordersiodendron pinnatum! (18 m), *Macaranga ? triloba, *Terminalia spec. (n. 3167).*

Partly cleared forest reserve of Lapean'a (limestone, 75—125 m alt.) — Trees: **Alphitonia zizyphoides, *Calophyllum soulattri, *Canangium odoratum, *Elaeocarpus dolichostylus!, *Endospermum spec. (n. 2728), *Eugenia ? fastigiata, *Ficus procera, *Glochidion zeylanicum var. malayanum, *Horsfieldia glabra, Intsia bijuga! (18 m), Koordersiodendron pinnatum, *Lepiniopsis ternatensis, *Litsea Forstenii, *Macaranga ? triloba, *Mezzettia spec. (n. 2898), *Millettia spec. (n. 3123), *Pimeleodendron amboinicum!, *Pisonia umbellifera, *P. spec. (n. 2537),*

**Pometia spec. (ns. 2982, 3128), *Rhus rufa, *Pterospermum celebicum, Scolopia ? spinosa! (14 m), Strombosia philippinensis! (21 m), *Terminalia spec. (n. 3167), Timonius celebicus! (13 m).*

LOC. 5, TRAIL TO G. PADIAN'A (0—200 m alt.).

Secondary forest and grass fields — Trees: *Ficus ampelas* — Shrubs: *Chasalia curviflora* — Herbs: *Cheilanthes tenuifolia* (! in alang-alang), *Tacca palmata.*

Cleared old forest on banks of K. Ampas (limestone) — Trees: *Chisocheton spec. (15 m, n. 3204)* — Lianas and climbers: *Arcangelisia flava, Iodes philippinensis* — Herbs: *Aglaonema oblongifolium, Cyclopeltis novo-guineensis* (on rocks in rivulet), *Elatostema spec. (n. 3213;* on rocks in rivulet), *Hemigraphis alternata* — Observed only, Trees: **Alstonia scholaris!, *Arthrophyllum diversifolium, *Buchanania arborescens, *Canarium commune!, *Champereia manillana!, *Diospyros Rumphii!, *Ficus ampelas, *F. pubinervis, *Garuga floribunda, *Intsia bijuga, *Koordersiodendron pinnatum, *Pimeleodendron amboinicum!, *Pometia spec. (n. 2982), *Pterospermum celebicum, *Strombosia philippinensis!, *Terminalia spec. (n. 3167), *Turpinia pomifera!*

Cleared old forest on G. Pangangadoan'a and G. Boewid'oe wawi (sedimentary grounds) — Trees: *Bridelia minutiflora!, Eugenia ? Everettii (13 m), Planchonella firma var. typica (13 m)* — Observed only, Trees: **Arthrophyllum diversifolium, *Canarium asperum, *C. balsamiferum, *Eugenia ? calubcob, *Ficus variegata, *Litsea Forstenii, *Ormosia calavensis, *Pimeleodendron amboinicum* — Herbs: **Biophytum sensitivum.*

Nenoesa.

LOC. 10, MERAMPI (0—220 m alt.).

Secondary forest on limestone terraces — Trees: **Aglaia ganggo, Antidesma ghaesembillia!, *Boerlageodendron serratifolium, *Calophyllum, soulattri, *Canangium odoratum, *Canarium asperum, Champereia manillana, *Commersonia Bartramia, *Diospyros hebecarpa, *D. Rumphii, *Elaeocarpus spec.! (n. 3120), *Eugenia ? fastigiata, *Ficus subulata, F. spec. (n. 3427), Garcinia tetrandra, *Garuga floribunda, *Geniostoma celebicum, Glochidion zeylanicum var. malayanum!, *Guettarda speciosa, *Hibiscus tillaceus, *Horsfieldia glabra, Intsia bijuga, *Macaranga Tanarius, Melanolepis multiglandulosa!, *Palaquium obtusifolium, *Pimeleodendron amboinicum, *Pipturus argenteus, Planchonella nitida, *P. obovata, *Pleomele spec. (n. 3075), Rapanea densiflora! (10 m), Rhus rufa!!, *Sterculia ceramica, *Strombosia philippinensis, *Terminalia spec. (n. 3167), Vavaea amicorum! (15 m)* — Shrubs: **Acalypha amentacea, *Alchornea rugosa, *Allophylus Cobbe, *Breynia cernua, Desmodium umbellatum, *Ehretia microphylla, *Ficus leucantatoma, *F. retusa, *Glycosmis pentaphylla, *Premna corymbosa, Pseuderanthemum spec. (n. 3437), *Wedelia biflora* — Herbs: **Hyptis capitata, *Spathoglottis plicata.*

Cultivated areas and open plateau — Trees: **Commersonia Bartramia* — Shrubs: *Callicarpa pedunculata* — Lianas and climbers:

Gleichenia linearis!, Ipomoea digitata, Merremia tridentata ssp. hastata — Herbs and undershrubs: *Achyranthes aspera, Cassia mimosoides, Knoxia corymbosa, Lycopodium cernuum, Osbeckia zeylanica, Polanisia icosandra, Wedelia biflora.*

LOC. 11, GARETE.

Cleared forest reserve on flat coral island — Trees: **Arthrophyllum diversifolium, *Barringtonia asiatica Kurz, Buchanania arborescens!, *Calophyllum soulattri, *Chisocheton spec. (n. 3204), Claoxylon longifolium, *Colona scabra, *Cyathocalyx ? acuminatus, *Cyclostemon Minahassae, *Diospyros hebecarpa, *Elaeocarpus dolichostylus, E. multiflorus (16 m), *Eugenia ? fastigiata, E. saligna! (13 m), E. spec.! (13 m, n. 3442), *Ficus retusa, *F. subulata, *F. spec. (n. 3452), *F. spec. (nat. n.: marapangi,* not collected), **Garcinia sizygifolia, *G. tetrandra, Guettarda speciosa!, *Horsfieldia glabra, Ochrosia oppositifolia!, Palaquium bataanense! (10 m), P. obtusifolium, *Pandanus latissimus, *P. spec. (n. 2992), *P. spec. (nat. n.: anàman,* not coll.), **P. spec. (nat. n.: pándan'a,* not coll.), **Pimeleodendron amboinicum, *Planchonella nitida, P. obovata (14 m), *Rapanea densiflora, Sterculia ceramica!, *Strombosia philippinensis, *Terminalia spec. (n. 3167), *Tournefortia argentea* — Shrubs: *Acalypha amentacea, *Allophylus Cobbe, Triumfetta procumbens* — Lianas and climbers: *Flagellaria indica, Hippocratea oblongifolia* — Hemiparasites: *Cassytha filiformis* — Herbs: *Crinum asiaticum.*

Miangas.

LOC. 9, MIANGAS (0—110 m alt.).[1])

P. Baronto, flat uplifted coral islet — Trees: **Cocos nucifera L., Terminalia spec. (n. 3370)* — Shrubs: *Callicarpa candicans!, Excoecaria Agallocha, Ficus ? kallicarpa, F. retusa, Rapanea densiflora!, Tournefortia argentea* — Herbs and undershrubs: *Acalypha boehmerioides, Euphorbia Atoto!, Fimbristylis spathacea!, Monerma repens.*

On and near beach — Trees: *Tournefortia argentea!* — Shrubs: *Clerodendrum Buchanani, Colubrina asiatica!, Ficus leucantatoma, *Pandanus latissimus, *P. tectorius, Pemphis acidula!, Pipturus argenteus!, Scaevola frutescens!, Triumfetta procumbens* — Hemiparasites: *Cassytha filiformis!* — Herbs: *Ipomoea Pes-caprae, Tacca leontopetaloides.*

Mangrove Vegetation — Trees: *Bruguiera cylindrica, Lumnitzera littorea* — Shrubs: **Acanthus ilicifolius, *? Ochrosia oppositifolia.*

Flat, dry cultivated area (c. cultivated) — Trees: **Albizzia saponaria, *Areca Catechu L. (c.), *Artocarpus communis (c.), *A. integra (Thunb.) Merr. (c.), *Ceiba pentandra (L.) Gaertn. (c.), *Cocos nucifera L. (c.), *Eugenia spec. (djamboe, c.), *Hibiscus tiliaceus, Inocarpus edulis (10 m, c.), Palaquium obtusifolium (10 m, c.), *Parkia javanica, *Pimeleodendron amboinicum, *Sesbania grandiflora (L.) Pers.* — Shrubs: **Mussaenda aff. philippica, Wedelia biflora!* — Herbs and undershrubs: *Abelmoschus Manihot forma leptodactylus (c.), Aclisia sorzogonen-*

[1]) This list is a correction to that given in my previous paper on Miangas (1932).

*sis, *Colocasia esculenta Schott (c.), Dryopteris Benoitiana, *Imperata cylindrica Beauv. var. Koenigii Benth., *Ipomoea Batatas Poir. (c.), *Musa paradisiaca L.* or *M. sapientum L. (c.), *M. textilis Née (c.), Nephrolepis biserrata, N. hirsutula, Polypodium phymatodes, *Saccharum spontaneum L. (c.), Selaginella spec. (n. 3403), Spathoglottis plicata.*

Freshwater swamps — Trees: **Inocarpus edulis, *Metroxylon spec.* — Herbs: *Cyperacea spec. (n. 3412), Cyrtosperma Merkusii (c.), Mariscus pennatus!*

G. Soro, open slope — Trees: **Albizzia saponaria, Commersonia Bartramia, Ficus ? kallicarpa, *Premna corymbosa, *Sesbania grandiflora (c.)* — Epiphytes: *Drynaria quercifolia!* — Hemiparasites: *Cassytha filiformis* — Herbs and undershrubs: *Biophytum sensitivum, Brachiaria reptans!, Fimbristylis annua!, Hemigraphis undulata, Oldenlandia biflora!, Scleria pubescens!*

G. Batoe, open slope — Trees: *Sterculia comosa* — Shrubs: *Premna corymbosa* — Herbs: *Asplenium adiantoides* (on rock), *Cenchrus Brownei, Sorghum laxiflorum!*

G. Batoe, grove (100 m alt.) — Trees: **Albizzia saponaria, Diospyros maritima, Ficus retusa, Melanolepis multiglandulosa, Pimeleodendron amboinicum* — Shrubs: *Acalypha amentacea, Breynia cernua, Desmodium gangeticum, Ehretia microphylla, Glycosmis pentaphylla!, Morinda citrifolia.*

G. Kota, grove (100 m alt.) — Trees: *Allophyllus Cobbe, Antidesma celebicum, Ficus retusa (10 m)* — Shrubs: *Triphasia trifolia* — Lianas: *Gymnema tingens, Schefflera elliptica* — Herbs: *Cyclophorus adnascens* (on rock), *Tacca palmata.*

Morotai.

LOC. 12a, WAJABOELA.

Cultivated area — Epiphytes: *Dischidia Collyris!*

LOC. 12, PILOWO — GOEGOETI (20—330 m alt.).

Marilako, bivouac and river bank (20 m alt.) — Trees: *Elaeocarpus Ganitrus (± 20 m), Eugenia ? acutangula! (± 15 m), Kleinhovia hospita! (± 10 m), Macaranga hispida! (± 10 m), Octomeles sumatrana! (40 m, ± 50 m), Oldenlandia spec. (14 m, n. 3636), Planchonella Vrieseana! (± 15 m)* — Shrubs: *Trema amboinensis* — Lianas: *Flagellaria indica!* — Herbs: *Alpinia malaccensis, Coix Lacryma-Jobi, Dryopteris invisa, Polygonum minus ssp. procerum.*

Marilako, forest on river terrace — Trees: *Aglaia argentea (15 m), *Anisoptera costata, *Canarium asperum, *C. commune!, C. decumanum! (15 m, ± 50 m), C. hirsutum, Celtis latifolia! (17 m), *Cerbera manghas, Dracontomelum dao! (30 m), *Eugenia ? acutangula, Ficus Cassidyana (± 10 m), *Gnetum gnemon, Haplolobus moluccanus! (14 m), Harpullia cupanioides, *Horsfieldia sylvestris!, Jagera serrata (± 10 m), *Lepiniopsis ternatensis!, *Palaquium Lobbianum, *Parastemon urophyllus!, *Pometia pinnata!* — Shrubs: *Allophylus sumatranus, Euphorbiacea spec. (n. 3654), Garcinia spec. (n. 3679), Leea indica!, Desmofischera*

monosperma, Mycetia ? javanica!, Psychotria leptothyrsa!, ? Tabernaemontana spec. (ns. 3658 = 3676) — Lianas and climbers: *Momordica cochinchinensis* (forest skirt), *Tournefortia sarmentosa* (forest skirt), *Uncaria pedicellata* — Epiphytes: *Antrophyum callifolium, Myrmecodia spec.! (n. 3663)* — Herbs: *Diplazium silvaticum, Donax canniformis!, Dryopteris spec.! (n. 3643), Leptaspis urceolata, Lindsaya decomposita, Mapania spec. (n. 3661), Ophiorrhiza spec. (n. 3659), Orchidacea spec. (n. 3675), Taenitis blechnoides!*

Goegoeti, G. Ligòjer (limestone, 40—120 m alt.) — Trees: *Annonacea spec. (11 m, n. 3585), Astronia ternatana (19 m), Carallia brachiata, Dysoxylum arborescens! (± 10 m), *Garcinia spec., Gironniera celtidifolia, Grewia ceramensis (15 m), Haplolobus moluccanus! (12 m), *Homalium foetidum, *Horsfieldia Roxburghii, *Intsia bijuga, *Lepiniopsis ternatensis, Manilkara Merrilliana! (30 m, ± 40 m), Palaquium Lobbianum! (30 m), Pandanus spec., Planchonella firma var. microcarpa! (25 m), *Pometia pinnata* — Shrubs: *Aglaia spec. (n. 3596), Ardisia lanceolata, Euphorbiacea spec.! (n. 3590), Garcinia spec. (n. 3603), Kibara cuspidata, ? Trigonostemon spec.! (n. 3595)* — Lianas and climbers: *Medinilla crassinervia, Piper amboinense, Vitacea (n. 3589)* — Epiphytes: *Asplenium nidus, Cyclophorus acrostichoides, Myrmephytum spec. (n. 3602), Polypodium musifolium* — Herbs and undershrubs: *Aracea spec. (n. 3592), Aspidium decurrens, Elatostema spec. (n. 3633), Ophiorrhiza spec. (n. 3591), Phrynium spec. (n. 3598).*

Goegoeti, river bed, riverbank and adjoining forest on river terrace (± 40 m alt.) — Trees: *Allophylus sumatranus, Dracontomelum dao (20 m), Endospermum formicarum! (20 m), Eugenia ? acutangula (35 m), Laportea amplissima! (± 10 m), Pipturus velutinus, Polyscias nodosa (13 m)* — Shrubs: *Ficus spec.! (n. 3573;* rheophyte, possibly the same species as collected by me in New Guinea, *Lam n. 1285* [1]*)*, *Piper spec. (n. 3619)* — Lianas: *Conocephalus suaveolens!, Gynostemma pedatum, Uncaria setiloba* — Epiphytes: *Drynaria rigidula!* — Hemiparasites: *Dicymanthes hexameres* — Herbs: *Aclisia sorzogonensis, Begonia spec. (n. 3605), Costus speciosus, Hemigraphis stenophylla, Impatiens spec. (n. 3575), Sorghum propinquum.*

Goegoeti, hill-forest (40—330 m alt.) (*a.* adventitious along mountain trail) — Trees: *Aglaia argentea, A. ganggo, A. spec.! (n. 3506), Anisoptera costata (30 m), Annonacea spec.! (40 m, n. 3496), Barringtonia acuminata, Boerlageodendron spec. (n. 3514), Buchanania arborescens (15 m), Calophyllum soulattri (25 m, ± 40 m), Canarium asperum! (18 m), C. commune (30 m), C. lian! (15 m), Castanopsis javanica! (20 m), Cerbera manghas! (15 m), Colona serratifolia, Conandrium spec.! (n. 3575), Elaeocarpus gigantifolius, Eugenia claviflora, E. formosa!, E. spec. (10 m, n. 3460), Flacourtia spec. (n. 3568), Gironniera celtidifolia, Gnetum gnemon var. domesticum, Gomphandra australiana (10 m), Gronophyllum ? microcarpum, Gyrinopsis Cumingiana, Haplolobus moluccanus, Homalium foetidum! (20 m), Horsfieldia globularia, H. Roxburghii!*

[1]) Cf. Lam, H. J., Fragmenta Papuana V — Nat. Tijdschr. Ned. Ind. 88, 1928, 255, fig. 30 (p. 257).

*(24 m), H. sylvestris! (20 m), *Intsia bijuga (± 40 m), Lauracea spec. (n. 3511), Lepiniopsis ternatensis (12 m), Memecylon protrusum, Notaphoebe umbelliflora (30 m), Palaquium Lobbianum!, Parastemon urophyllus (28 m), Polyalthia laterifolia (30 m), *Pometia pinnata!, Psychotria spec. (n. 3474), P. spec. (n. 3535), Timonius spec. (n. 3542), Vatica papuana! (20 m)* — Shrubs: *Alchornea rugosa (a.), Amaracarpus spec. (n. 3513), Claoxylon longifolium, Cleistanthus megacarpus, Cyrtandra ? pallida, Ficus spec. (n. 3541), Lachnostoma apoda, Desmofischera monosperma, ? Olacacea spec. (n. 3571), Osmelia philippina* — Lianas and climbers: *Calamus spec.! (n. 3527), Embelia coriacea, Ficus falcata!, *Freycinetia spec., Mastersia Bakeri, Piper villilimbum, *Pothos spec., Psychotria spec. (n. 3512), Santaloides (ns. 3458, 3569), Uvaria purpurea* — Epiphytes: *Antrophyum callifolium, Asplenium adiantoides, A. nidus, A. scolopendrioides, Bulbophyllum spec. (n. 3494), B. spec. (n. 3523), Calymnanthera ? paniculata, Ceratostylis spec. (n. 3554), Dendrobium hydrophilum, D. quadrialatum, *Dischidia spec., Drynaria sparsisora!, Eria spec. (n. 3549), Hydnophytum philippinense!, Lycopodium pinifolium!, Monogramma paradoxa, Orchidacea spec. (n. 3480), O. spec. (n. 3521), Podochilus Lamii, Polypodium obtussisimum, Robiquetia spec. (n. 3483), Taeniophyllum spec. (n. 3482), Vittaria elongata* — Herbs and undershrubs: *Aspidium pentaphyllum, Centotheca latifolia (a.), Curculigo capitulata!, Cyperacea spec.! (n. 3465), C. spec.! (n. 3606), Dryopteris spec. (n. 3517), Elatostema spec. (n. 3520), Hemigraphis Rumphii var. pubescens, Lindsaya concinna!, L. tenuifolia, Mapania spec.! (ns. 3479, 3546), Microstegium fasciculatum (a.), Ophiorrhiza spec. (n. 3488), Oplismenus undulatifolius (a), Plocoglottis spec. (n. 3558), Polypodium harpophyllum, Schizaea dichotoma, Selaginella asperulipes!, S. caudata!, S. cupressina!, S. Gaudichaudiana!, Tapeinidium moluccanum!, Taenitis blechnoides!, Trichomanes rhomboideum, Zingiberacea spec. (n. 3559).*

5. PHYTOGEOGRAPHICAL NOTES.

It hardly needs to be emphasized that, in view of the facts that only a part of the material was identified by specialists and that the flora of these and of the surrounding islands is still very insufficiently known, the value of the following phytogeographical notes should not be overestimated. They merely may serve as a basis for further work in this field.

In order to investigate whether, and if so, to what degree, the present collection gives rise to any phytogeographical considerations, we distributed the species enumerated in the Systematic Part of this paper, according to their areas to the following groups:

1. Large concentric areas: I. Cosmopolitic; II. Pantropic; III. Paleotropic; IV. Old World Wides, A. East Africa (Madagascar, Mascarenes) to Polynesia, B. India (Seychelles, Ceylon), Burma, Siam, Indo China or China (in a few cases also Japan) to Polynesia.

2. Large excentric areas: V. Western Element, A. East Africa, etc. (cf. IV. A) to Moluccas or New Guinea, B. India, etc. (cf. IV. B) to Moluccas or New Guinea; VI. Eastern Element, A. Polynesia to Western Malaysia (Malay Peninsula and Formosa inclusive), B. Polynesia to Central Malaysia.

3. Malaysian areas: VII, A. Malaysian Wides (the whole of Malaysia, Malay Peninsula, the Philippines and New Guinea inclusive; in some few cases Burma, Formosa, the Bismarck Archipelago and the Solomon Islands have also been included), B. Central or Eastern Malaysian areas, C. Areas of species collected in Morotai, and restricted to the Moluccas, D. Areas of direct value to the phytogeography of Talaud or Morotai (additional evidence is provided by some species of the groups V. B, VI. B and VII. A, B, and C.

As appears from Table II, the total number of species treated was 611, 386 of which were finally, the other 225 provisionally identified; there were 524 from Talaud or from both Talaud and Morotai, and 87 from Morotai only. The number of endemics have been mentioned in brackets. That this number is small is, of course, mainly due to the fact that about 100 species from Talaud and about 50 from Morotai remained unidentified (cf. Systematic Part, § § 2 and 3) and particularly among them a number of new species may be expected (cf. the preliminary elaboration of the Rubiaceae).

Enumeration of the species according to their area-groups.

For each area-type the species have been arranged alphabetically within the main taxonomic groups Pteridophytes, Gymnosperms, Monocotyledons and Dicotyledons. Moreover, they have been arranged according to whether their identification was "final" (F), or "provisional" (P). A single * asterisk denotes species or varieties previously described, a double ** asterisk such as were described in the present paper. M. means collected in Morotai only, the other species were collected in Talaud or both in Talaud and in Morotai; if necessary the first-named condition has been stipulated by T. For the signification of W. and E., see Table II; (rel.) means that the phytogeographical relation is based upon a systematical relation, not upon direct geographical evidence.

I. Cosmopolitic — Dicotyledons, **F.**: *Solanum nigrum.*

II. Pantropic — Pteridophytes, **F.**: *Acrostichum aureum, Diplazium sylvaticum* (M.), *Dryopteris gongylodes, Gleichenia linearis, Lycopodium cernuum, Nephrolepis biserrata, N. hirsutula* — Monocotyledons, **F.**: *Brachiaria reptans, Coix Lacryma-Jobi* (orig. paleotr.), *Commelina nudiflora, Echinochloa colonum, Polystachya flavescens;* **P.**: *Cyperus distans, Fimbristylis annua, F. miliacea, F. spathacea, Kyllinga brevifolia, Panicum Crus-galli, Rhynchospora corymbosa, Scleria lithosperma, Torulinium ferax* — Dicotyledons, **F.**: *Achyranthes aspera, Ageratum conyzoides* (orig. neotr.), *Asclepias curassavica, Biophytum sensitivum, Cassytha filiformis, Corchorus acutangulus, Emilia sonchifolia, Graptophyllum pictum, Guettarda speciosa, Hyptis capitata, Ipomoea aquatica, I. congesta, I. digitata, I. Pes-caprae ssp. brasiliensis, Jussieua angustifolia, J. linifolia, Melochia concatenata, Passiflora foetida, Physalis minima, Polanisia icosandra, Scoparia dulcis, Solanum torvum, Vernonia cinerea;* **P.**: *Abelmoschus Manihot, A. moschatus, Hibiscus tiliaceus, Triphasia trifolia, Ximenia americana.*

III. Paleotropic — Pteridophytes, **F.**: *Angiopteris evecta, Asplenium adiantoides, A. nidus, Cyclophorus adnascens, Lycopodium Phleg-*

TABLE II.

Geographic distribution of the species, enumerated in the Systematic Part.

AREA			Identifications						Grand Total		
			Final			Provisional					
Nr.	TYPE		TAL.	MOR.	Total	TAL.	MOR.	Total	TAL.	MOR.	Total
I	Cosmopolitic		1	—	1	—	—	—	1	—	1
II	Pantropic		34	1	35	14	—	14	48	1	49
III	Paleotropic		20	1	21	6	—	6	26	1	27
IV	Old World Wides	A	25	—	25	8	1	9	33	1	34
		B	49	5	54	14	1	15	63	6	69
V	Western Element	A	1	—	1	—	—	—	1	—	1
		B	41 (7 W.)	2	43	31 (6 W.)	8 (1 W.)	39	72 (13 W.)	10 (1 W.)	82
VI	Eastern Element	A	9	—	9	5	—	5	14	—	14
		B	5 (1 E.)	—	5	1 (1 E.)	—	1	6 (2 E.)	—	6
VII	Malaysian Areas	A	41 (4 W.)	10 (3 W.)	51	56 (22 W.)	11 (5 W.)	67	97 (26 W.)	21 (8 W.)	118
		B	25	7	32	16	3	19	41	10	51
		C	—	9	9	—	2	2	—	11	11
		D	82	18	100	40 (1 E.)	8	48	122 (1 E.)	26	148
	Totals		333 (11 W., 1 E.) (20 end.)	53 (3 W.) (9 end.)	386	191 (28 W., 2 E.)	34 (6 W.)	225	524 (38 W., 3 E.)	87 (9 W.)	611

TAL. collected in Talaud or in Talaud and Morotai — MOR. collected in Morotai only — W., E. Species of the western (eastern) element, reaching their eastern (western) limit here.

maria, Polypodium harpophyllum (M.), *P. phymatodes, P. punctatum, Schizoloma ensifolium, Taenitis blechnoides* — Monocotyledons, **F.**: *Epipogum roseum* (exc. Polynesia) *Tacca leontopetaloides;* **P.**: *Flagellaria indica, Mariscus pennatus* — Dicotyledons, **F.**: *Acanthus ilicifolius, Bidens chinensis, Colubrina asiatica, Cordia Myxa, Desmodium gangeticum, D. heterocarpum, Kleinhovia hospita, Lindernia crustacea, Pemphis acidula;* **P.**: *Alstonia scholaris, Antidesma ghaesembilla, Bruguiera conjugata, Rhizophora mucronata.*

IV. Old World Wides.

A. East Africa, etc. to Polynesia — Pteridophytes, **F.**: *Antrophyum callifolium, Dryopteris unita, Schizaea dichotoma, Trichomanes cupressoides* — Monocotyledons, **F.**: *Caldesia reniformis, Cyrtococcum oxyphyllum;* **P.**: *Oplismenus undulatifolius* (M.; Europe to Australia), *Pandanus tectorius* — Dicotyledons, **F.**: *Blumea lacera, Callicarpa candicans, Clerodendrum inerme, Derris heterophylla, Desmodium umbellatum, Hernandia ovigera, Inocarpus edulis, Intsia bijuga, Ipomoea gracilis, Melochia umbellata, Merremia peltata, M. tridentata, Pipturus velutinus, Pongamia pinnata, Premna corymbosa, Scaevola frutescens, Tournefortia argentea, T. sarmentosa, Triumfetta procumbens;* **P.**: *Calophyllum Inophyllum, C. soulattri, Eugenia cymosa, Euphorbia Atoto, E. serrulata, Sonneratia caseolaris, Vanieria cochinchinensis.*

B. India, etc. to Polynesia — Pteridophytes, **F.**: *Aspidium decurrens* (M.), *A. Leuzeanum, Asplenium tenerum, Cheilanthes tenuifolia, Cyclophorus acrostichoides* (M.), *Davallia solida Drynaria quercifolia, D. rigidula* (M.), *D. sparsisora* (M.), *Dryopteris calcarata, Helminthostachys zeylanica, Humata Gaimardiana, Hymenolepis mucronata, Lindsaya decomposita, Lygodium circinnatum, L. scandens, Monogramma paradoxa* (M.), *Ophioglossum pendulum, Polypodium longispinum, Pteris longipinnula, P. vittata, Schizaea digitata, Vittaria elongata* — Gymnosperms, **F.**: *Gnetum gnemon, Podocarpus neriifolia* — Monocotyledons, **F.**: *Aclisia sorzogonensis, Centotheca latifolia, Cyanotis axillaris, Floscopa scandens, Ischaemum muticum, Paspalum longifolium;* **P.**: *Crinum asiaticum, Curculigo capitulata, Homalomena aromatica, Mariscus cyperinus, Monerma repens, Saccharum spontaneum, Scleria scrobiculata, Smilax zeylanica* — Dicotyledons, **F.**: *Adenostemma Lavenia, Aegiceras corniculatum, Allophylus Cobbe, Alyxia stellata, Bischofia javanica, Cassia mimosoides, Cerbera manghas, Commersonia Bartramia, Ehretia microphylla, Excoecaria Agallocha, Lumnitzera littorea, Melanolepis multiglandulosa, Melastoma polyanthum, Morinda citrifolia, Mucuna gigantea, Ochrosia oppositifolia, Oldenlandia biflora, Osbeckia zeylanica, Pittosporum ferrugineum, Planchonella obovata, Pouzolzia zeylanica, Pueraria Thunbergiana, Wedelia biflora;* **P.**: *Barringtonia racemosa, Claoxylon longifolium, Crataeva religiosa, Elaeocarpus Ganitrus* (M.), *Micromelum minutum, Stephania hernandiifolia, Trema amboinensis.*

V. Western Element.

A. East Africa, etc. to Malaysia — Dicotyledons **F.**: *Ajuga bracteosa.*

B. India, etc. to Malaysia — Pteridophytes, **F.**: *Adi-*

antum flabellatum, Alsophila glauca, Aspidium polymorphum (W., T.), *Lindsaya pectinata, Selaginella involvens* — Monocotyledons, **F.**: *Calanthe veratrifolia, Cenchrus Brownei* (also trop. Amer.), *Eragrostis unioloides, Galeola Kuhlii* (W., T.), *Garnotia stricta, Hymenachne amplexicaulis* (also trop. Amer.), *Ischaemum polystachyum, Microstylis latifolia, Sacciolepis aurita* (W., T.), *Sorghum propinquum;* **P.**: *Alpinia malaccensis* (M.), *Dioscorea oppositifolia, Leptaspis urceolata* (M.), *Microstegium fasciculatum* (M.) (W., M.), *Scleria hebecarpa var. pubescens, Sporobolus elongatus* — Dicotyledons, **F.**: ***Artabotrys macrantha* (rel.), *Blumea balsamifera, B. laciniata, Boehmeria clidemioides, Chasalia curviflora* (W., T.), *Clerodendrum japonicum, Dalbergia candenatensis, Dolichandrone spathacea, Euonymus javanicus, Gymnema tingens, Gynostemma pedatum* (M.), *Hedyotis vestita, Hippocratea oblongifolia, Hygrophila salicifolia, Ilysanthes antipoda, Knoxia corymbosa, Mollugo pentaphylla, Momordica cochinchinensis* (M.), *Oldenlandia pterita* (W., T.), *Parkia javanica* (W., T.), *Pericampylus glaucus, Peristrophe bivalvis, Piper sarmentosum, Planchonella nitida, Scolopia spinosa* (W., T.), *Stachytarpheta indica, Turpinia pomifera, Uraria lagopodioides;* **P.**: *Alchornea rugosa, Bruguiera cylindrica, Buchanania arborescens* (W., T.), *Carallia brachiata, Ceriops Roxburghiana, Champereia manillana, Cissus hastata* (W., T.), *Cleistanthus myrianthus, Columella corniculata* (W., T.), *Conocephalus suaveolens* (M.), *Croton argyratus, Dysoxylum arborescens, Erythropalum scandens* (W., T.), *Eugenia claviflora* (W., T.), *E. saligna, Evodia latifolia, Fatoua pilosa, Ficus falcata* (M.), *F. leucantatoma, F. retusa, F. subulata, F. variegata, Garcinia Morella* (W., T.), *Glycosmis pentaphylla, Harpullia cupanioides* (M.), *Leea indica* (M.), *Linociera ramiflora, Maoutia Puya, Otophora fruticosa, Polygala glomerata, Uvaria purpurea* (M.), *Wikstroemia indica, Zanthoxylum Avicennae.*

VI. Eastern Element.

A. Polynesia to Western Malaysia — Pteridophytes, **F.**: *Trichomanes humile, T. millefolium* — Monocotyledons, **F.**: *Coelorhachis glandulosa, Tacca palmata* — Dicotyledons, **F.**: *Lophopyxis Maingayi, Pipturus argenteus, P. incanus, Planchonella oxyedra, Pseudopipturus repandus;* **P.**: *Acalypha boehmerioides, Jasminum simplicifolium, Mallotus tiliifolius, Pisonia umbellifera, Pometia pinnata.*

B. Polynesia to Central Malaysia — Gymnosperms, **F.**: *Gnetum gnemon var. sylvestre* (3.4.5) [1]) — Monocotyledons, **F.**: *Gahnia aspera* (3-4-5-5a) — Dicotyledons, **F.**: *Clematis aristata* (E., T.) (3), *Faradaya splendens* (3-4.5a), *Lepistemon urceolatus* (3-4.5.5a); **P.**: *Codiaeum variegatum* (E., T.).

VII. Malaysian areas.

A. Malaysian Wides — Pteridophytes, **F.**: *Lycopodium pinifolium* (M.), *Polypodium heracleum, P. musifolium* (M.), *Selaginella caudata* (M.), *Trichomanes rhomboideum* (M.), *T. sumatranum* — Gymnosperms, **F.**: *Gnetum cuspidatum* — Monocotyledons, **F.**: *Appendiculata reflexa, Didymoplexis minor var. *salmonea, Digitaria*

[1]) See under VII. D.

microbachne, Donax canniformis, Eulophia squalida, Thelasis micrantha (W., T.); **P.**: *Aglaonema oblongifolium, Costus speciosus, Cyrtosperma Merkusii, Rhaphidophora Korthalsii* (W., T.), *Sciaphila tenella* (W., T.), *Scindapsus Cuscuaria* — Dicotyledons, **F.**: *Anisoptera costata* (M.) (W., M.), *Antidesma celebicum, Arcangelisia flava, Argostemma prob. n. sp.* (rel.), *Astronia macrophylla, Avicennia marina* (E. Afr. to Austr.) *var. Rumphiana, Callicarpa pedunculata, Canangium odoratum* (W., T.), *Canarium hirsutum f. typicum* (M.) (W., M.), *Clerodendrum Buchanani, Dalbergia meneoides* (W., T.), *Deeringia polysperma, Diospyros maritima, Duabanga moluccana, Embelia coriacea* (M.) (W., M.), *Garuga floribunda, Geunsia pentandra,* ***Gymnacranthera Ibutii* (rel.), ***Hemigraphis undulata* (rel.), *Homalanthus populneus, Laportea amplissima* (M.), *Macaranga Tanarius, Mallotus ricinoides, Medinilla pterocaula, Memecylon costatum,* ***M. protrusum* (M., rel.), *Mycetia javanica, Octomeles sumatrana* (M.), *Osbornia octodonta, Palaquium obtusifolium, Parsonsia Cumingiana, Phyllanthus lamprophyllus, Piper abbreviatum* (W., T.), *Planchonella firma, Polygonum minus ssp. procerum, Psychotria sarmentosa, Scurrula fusca, Uncaria pedicellata, Villebrunea rubescens;* **P.**: *Acalypha amentacea, A. Caturus, Aglaia argentea* (M.), *A. ganggo, Allophylus sumatranus* (M.), *Ardisia lanceolata* (M.) (W., M.), *Arthrophyllum diversifolium, Artocarpus elastica, Baccaurea javanica* (W., T.), *Breynia cernua, Bridelia glauca, B. minutiflora, Campnosperma oxyrhachis* (W., T.), *Castanopsis javanica* (M.) (W., M.), *Cissus nodosa* (W., T.), *Croton laevifolius, Cyclostemon Minahassae* (W., T.), *Cyrtandra coccinea* (W., T.), *Dischidia Collyris* (M.), *D. hirsuta, Epirixanthes elongata* (W., T.), *Eugenia fastigiata* (W., T.), *E. formosa* (M.), *Euphorbia serrulata (hairy form), Evodia glabra, Ficus ampelas, F. celebica, F. kallicarpa* (W., T.), *F. lanata* (W., T.), *F. procera, F. pubinervis* (W., T.), *F. recurva, Garcinia sizygifolia, Glochidion philippicum, G. rubrum* (W., T.), *G. zeylanicum* (India to Malaysia) *var. malayanum, Gomphandra javanica* (W., T.), *Horsfieldia glabra* (W., T.), *H. globularia* (M.) (W., M.), *H. sylvestris* (M.), *Iodes ovalis, Leea aculeata, L. acuminata, L. javanica, Leucosyke capitellata, Lunasia amara, Macaranga triloba* (W., T.), *Notaphoebe umbelliflora* (W., T.), *Parastemon urophyllus* (M.) (W., M.), *Phaleria urens* (W., T.), *Pisonia sylvestris, Polyalthia laterifolia* (M.) (W., M.), *Polyscias nodosa* (M.), *Pometia tomentosa* (W., T.), *Pygeum latifolium* (W., T.), *Rauwolfia javanica* (W., T.), *Rhus rufa, Schefflera confinis, S. elliptica, Trichosporum radicans* (W., T.).

B. Central and Eastern Malaysia — Pteridophytes, **F.**: *Lygodium borneense* (BT [1]), *Tapeinidium moluccanum* (3.4.4a) [2]) (BCT +) — Monocotyledons, **F.**: *Dendrobium Koordersii* (M.) (4d), *D. lancifolium* (3) (CTM), **Microstylis talaudensis* (rel.) (3-4a) (CTM), *M. trigonopetala* (CT), **Podochilus Lamii* (M.) (rel.); **P.**: *Alpinia pectinata* (CT), *Amomum roseum* (3.4a) (CTM), *Freycinetia De-Vriesei* (3) (CTM), *Mischophloeus paniculatus* (3) (CTM +) — Dicotyledons, **F.**: *Amylotheca stenopetala* (CT +), *Brownlowia Beccarii* (BCT), *Canarium asperum* (2.3.4), *C. balsamiferum* (3.4a) (CTM), *C.*

[1]) For explanation see below.
[2]) See under VII. B.

commune (3), *Clerodendrum Minahassae* (CT), *Colona scabra* (3) (CTM), *Diospyros Rumphii* (3) (CTM), *Elatostema polioneurum* (3-4a) (CTM), *Elmerrillia ovalis* (CT), *Geniostoma celebicum* (CT), *Ginalloa Arnottiana* (1. 2), *Hemigraphis alternata, H. stenophylla* (M.) (4d?), *Homalium foetidum* (M.), ***Jasminum suberosum* (rel., CT), *Mastersia Bakeri* (M.) (4d), *Medinilla crassinervia* (M.), *Ophiorrhiza parviflora* (CT +), *Piper amboinicum* (M.) (4d), *Planchonella firma var. microcarpa* (3. 4a) (CTM), *Pterospermum celebicum* (CT), *Randia multiflora* (rel., 2), *Timonius celebicus* (CT); **P.**: *Artocarpus reticulata* (3) (CTM), *Barringtonia acuminata* (M.), *Buchanania amboinensis* (M.), *Cinnamomum celebicum* (CT), *Evodia Minahassae* (CT), *Ficus botryocarpa* (CT), *Gomphandra australiana* (Austr., New Guinea, Morotai, Celebes) *var. celebica* (M.), *Litsea accedens* (BCT), *L. Forstenii* (3) (CTM), *Myristica celebica* (CT), *Polyalthia celebica* (CT), *Polyscias Rumphiana* (3. 4. 4a) (CTM), *Rauwolfia amsoniifolia* (3. 4) (CTM +), *Rubus fraxinifolius ssp. celebicus, Stephania cauliflora* (CT), *Tetraplasandra Koordersii* (CT).

Group VII. B comprises a number of species which later on possibly will appear to belong to VII. D, i. e. the areas of which are supposedly incompletely known in so far as one or more links are missing at the time being. Our present knowledge of the phytogeographical relations between the islands of Central Malaysia, as appearing from the papers of E. D. Merrill and others (cf. Lam, l. c., 1938), supported by geological evidence (Lam, l. c., 147—151), permits us, in my opinion, to base considerations in this field upon the hypothesis that, for instance, there has never been a direct connection between Borneo and Talaud, and between Borneo and the Moluccas, and possibly not between North Celebes and Talaud and between North Celebes and the Northern Moluccas either, other than through the Southern Philippines. There is, however, a distinct direct phytogeographical connection between Central Celebes (east arm) and the Southern Moluccas.

From this point of view such areas as Borneo-Talaud and Celebes-Talaud possibly have, at least partly, to be considered incomplete in that the Philippine links are missing (see further the end of the present paragraph, p. 125). In view of these considerations the following areas out of the 51 mentioned under VII. B, deserve special attention:

Celebes-Talaud (not known from the Philippines), 15 species marked (CT) in the above enumeration, 1 moreover in Salajar and 1 in Salajar and Flores, both marked (CT +).

Celebes-Talaud-Moluccas, 12 species marked (CTM) in the above enumeration, 2 moreover in New Guinea (1 of which moreover in Timor), both marked (CTM +).

Borneo-Celebes-Talaud, 2 species, marked (BCT), 1 moreover in the Moluccas and New Guinea, marked (BCT +).

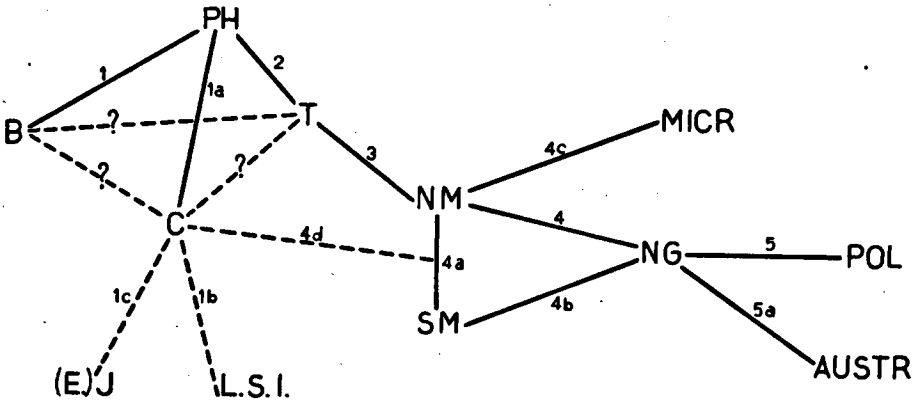
Borneo-Talaud, 1 species, marked (BT).

The remaining species either indicate the Central Celebes to Southern Moluccas connection or include this or one of the above-mentioned areas. Some few are known only from Borneo and (or) Celebes and the Moluccas, not from the Philippines and Talaud (*Barringtonia ac., Buchanania arb., Gomphandra austr. var., Hemigraphis sten., Homalium foet., Medinilla cr.*).

C. Moluccan Areas of Morotai plants (N. northern Moluccas only, Obi-Morotai; NS. both northern and southern Moluccas) — Pteridophytes, **F.**: *Selaginella asperulipes* (N.) — Dicotyledons, **F.**: *Astronia ternatana* (NS.) (4a), *Canarium lian* (N.), *Grewia ceramensis* (NS.) (4a), *Haplolobus moluccanus* (NS.) (4a), *Horsfieldia Roxburghii* (NS.) (4a), *Lachnostoma apodum* (NS.) (4a), *Palaquium Lobbianum* (N.), *Planchonella Vrieseana* (NS.) (4a); **P.**: *Gronophyllum microcarpum* (NS.) (4a), *Jagera serrata* (NS.) (4a).

D. Areas more directly significant for the phytogeography of Talaud and Morotai.

In order to investigate the importance of the single areas of this group, we will make use of the following scheme, in which all phytogeographically possible connections are indicated by a number. For each of the species of the present group these numbers have been mentioned,



B. Borneo, PH. Philippines, T. Talaud, NM. Northern Moluccas (Morotai inclusive), NG. New Guinea, POL. Polynesia, C. Celebes, (E.) J. (East) Java, L.S.I. Lesser Sunda Islands, SM. Southern Moluccas, MICR. Micronesia, AUSTR. Australia.

as has been done for those species of the groups VI. B and VII. B which, though covering a larger area, are partly significant for the phytogeography of Talaud and (or) Morotai.

If a connection between two not immediately adjacent regions is indicated by an uninterrupted area, the numbers in question are separated by a point, if, however, the area is interrupted, they are separated by a hyphen. For instance, if a species is known to occur in the Philippines as well as in Talaud and in Morotai (or in any other island in the Northern Moluccas), its distribution has been indicated by (2. 3); if, however, it is only known from the Philippines and Morotai (or, in general, the Northern Moluccas), not from Talaud, its symbol is (2-3); if, finally, it is known from Talaud, and the nearest relations are found in the Philippines and in the Northern Moluccas, its area is symbolized by (rel.) (2. 3), etc.

Pteridophytes, **F.**: *Alsophila Fenicis* (2. 3), *Aspidium pentaphyllum* (3. 4), *Asplenium scandens* (1. 2. 3. 4-5), *A. scolopendrioides* (M.)

(1. 2. 3. 4), *Cyclopeltis novoguineensis* (3-4), *Dryopteris Benoitiana* (3), *D. invisa* (2-3. 4. 5), *D. spec.* (3-4), *Lindsaya concinna* (M.) (1. 2-3), *L. gracillima* (2), *L. tenuifolia* (1c?-2-3. 4. 5), *Microlepia manilensis* (1c? 1a. 2), *Polypodium obtusissimum* (2. 3), *Pteris melanocaulon* (2. 3. 4a), *Selaginella cupressina* (1c?-2. 3), *S. Gaudichaudiana* (M.) (4a. 4b), *Schizoloma ovatum* (1. 1a. 2) — Gymnosperms, **F.**: *Gnetum gnemon var. domesticum* (1a. 1b. 2. 3. 4. 4a) — Monocotyledons, **F.**: *Aneilema vitiensis* (1a. 1b. 2. 3. 4. 5), **Dendrobium dimorphum* (rel.) (3), *D. hydrophilum var.* **morotaiense* (M.) (rel.) (4), *D. Mirbelianum* (3. 4), *D. quadrialatum* (M.) (4), **D. talaudense* (rel.) (3-4), *D. ternatense* (M.) (1a. 2-3), *Eria oligotricha* (3-4a. 4b), *Eulophia venosa* (3-4. 5a), **Microstylis purpureo-viridis* (rel.) (3-4), *Peristylus papuanus* (3-4a. 4b), *Sorghum laxiflorum* (2. 3-4. 5a); **P.**: *Alpinia pubiflora* (2. 3-4-4c), *Cladium philippinense* (2), *Dianella coerulea* (2. 3-4. 5. 5a), *Pandanus latissimus* (3-4a), *Pothos Rumphii* (1a. 2. 3. 4), *Riedelia curviflora* (3. 4. 5), *Themeda gigantea* (1a. 2. 3) — Dicotyledons, **F.**: *Adenia pandurata* (3-4), *Albizzia saponaria* (Indo China, 1a. 2. 3. 4), *Alphitonia sizyphoides* (1. 1a. 2. 3. 4a. 4. 5. 5a), *Amyema celebica* (1a. 2), *A. rigidiflora* (3-4), *Antirrhoea microphylla* (2), *Anthocephalus macrophyllus* (3. 4a), *Canthium prob. n. sp.* (rel.) (3), *Colona serratifolia* (M.) (1. 1a. 2-3), *Couthovia celebica* (1a. 2), **Dicymanthes hexameres* (M.) (rel.) (1a. 1b. 1c. 2-3), *Diospyros hebecarpa* (1a. 2. 3-4. 5. 5a), ***Discocalyx silvestris* (rel.) (1. 2. 3. 4. 5), *Dolicholobium prob. n. sp.* (rel.) (2. 3. 4. 5), *Endospermum formicarum* (M.) (4), *Eugenia panduriformis* (2), *Ficus Minahassae* (1a. 2), *Gynochthodes prob. n. sp.* (rel.) (2), ***Hemigraphis ceramensis* (3-4a), ***H. lanceolata* (1a. 2), ***H. Rumphii* (3. 4a), *Horsfieldia novo-guineensis* (3. 4), *Hydnophytum amboinense* (3), *H. inerme* (3-4), *H. philippinense* (M.) (2-3), *Iaera lanaensis* (2), *Ilex paucinervia* (2), *Ipomoea tiliacea* (trop. Amer., 3-4), ***Ixora talaudensis* (rel.) (1a. 2. 3), *Lepidagathis Robinsonii* (3-4a), *Lepiniopsis ternatensis* (1a. 2. 3), *Macaranga hispida* (1a. 2. 3. 4), *M. Mappa* (1a. 2. 3), ***Macropsychanthus dolichobotrys* (rel.) (2. 3-4-4c), *Maesa tetrandra* (Java, 3. 4), *Manilkara Merrilliana* (M.) (1a. 2-3), *Medinilla Teysmanni* (1a. 2. 3. 4?), *Morinda prob. n. sp.* (rel.) (China to Formosa, 1. 1a. 2), *Mussaenda philippica* (2. rel. 3), *Myrmecodia prob. n. sp.* (nr. 1) (rel.) (2. 3), *M. prob. n. sp.* (nr. 2) (M.) (rel.) (1a. 2-3), *Myrmephytum prob. n. sp.* (M.) (rel.) (1a. 2-3), *Myrtella Beccarii* (3-4), *Myxopyrum ovatum* (3-4a), *Nauclea mitragyna* (2. 3), *Ophiorrhiza prob. n. sp.* (nr. 1) (rel.) (2. 3), *O. prob. n. sp.* (nr. 2) (M.) (rel.) (2-3), *Ormosia calavensis* (1a. 2. 3), *Osmelia philippina* (M.) (2-3. 4), *Palaquium bataanense* (1a. 2), *P. luzoniense* (1a. 2), *Pimeleodendron amboinicum* (3. 4), *Piper villilimbum* (2-3. 4a), *Psychotria leptothyrsa* (2. 3), *P. prob. n. sp.* (nr. 1) (rel.) (2), *P. prob. n. sp.* (nr. 3) (M.) (rel.) (2-3), *Pueraria pulcherrima* (1a. 2), *Rapanea densiflora* (3-4a. 4b), *Scaevola micrantha* (2), *Sterculia ceramica* (1a. 2. 3), *S. comosa* (1a. 2. 3-4a), *S. Treubii* (3-4a), *Styphelia moluccana* (3. 4a), *Terminalia Copelandii* (2), *Trichospermum eriopodum* (2), *Uncaria longiflora* (2. 3), *U. setiloba* (M.) (rel.) (2-3), *U. prob. n. sp.* (rel.) (2. 3), *Vatica papuana* (M.) (1. 2-3. 4), *Vernonia lanceolata* (3. 4); **P.**: *Antidesma Cumingii* (2), *Artocarpus communis* (3-4. 5) (E., T.), *Blumeodendron paucinervium* (2), *Boerlageodendron barbatum* (3-4a), *B. serratifolium* (2), *Celtis latifolia* (M.) (4. 4b), *Cleistanthus megacarpus* (M.) (1.

2-3), *Cyathocalyx acuminatus* (2), *Cyclostemon littoralis* (2), *Cyrtandra capitellata* (3), *C. pallida* (M.) (2-3), *Dalbergia ferruginea* (1. 2. 3-4-4c), *Decaspermum Blancoi* (2), *Dischidia Copelandii* (2), *Dracontomelum dao* (1a-2. 3), *Elaeocarpus dolichostylus* (3-4), *E. gigantifolius* (M.) (2-3), *E. multiflorus* (1a. 2), *Eugenia acutangula* (M.) (4a. 4b), *E. calubcob* (2), *E. Everettii* (2), *Fagraea ternatana* (3), *Ficus Cassidyana* (M.) (3), *F. heteropoda* (1a. 2. 3), *F. rudis* (1a. 2. 3), *Garcinia rhizophoroides* (2), *G. tetrandra* (1a. 2), *Gironniera celtidifolia* (M.) (2. 3. 4. 5), *Gyrinopsis Cumingiana* (M.) (1a. 2. 3), *Hoya sussuela* (3-4a), *Iodes philippinensis* (1. 2), *Koordersiodendron pinnatum* (1. 1a. 2. 3. 4), ***Desmofischera monosperma* (2), *Litsea Perrottetii* (1a. 2. 3), *Melicope triphylla* (2), *Schefflera ovoidea* (2), *Schuurmansia Theophrasta* (3. 4), *Strombosia philippinensis* (2), *Tylophora Perrottetiana* (2), *Vaccinum Vidalii* (2), *Vavaea amicorum* (2. 3-4..5).

A simple calculation from the above-mentioned data show that the groups VI. B, VII. B, VII. C and VII. D comprise 5, 23, 8 and 148 species respectively, which may be considered directly evidential for the phytogeography of Talaud and (or) Morotai. In addition, there are 20 species with "incomplete" areas, mentioned under VII. B, parts of which have not been considered among the 23 just quoted, making a total of 204 species. *Table III* displays the phytogeographical relations indicated by these 204 species, in which final and provisional identifications have always been distinguished, although there is little reason to fear that the latter are, on the whole, much less trustworthy than the former.

In Column I of Table III the areas represented in the collection are enumerated by means of their symbols, used in the scheme on p. 122.

Column II shows the numbers of species which exclusively cover the single areas. For instance, the area Talaud-Philippines (nr. 3, symbol: 2) is known for 26 species, viz. 10 "finals" and 16 "provisionals"; the area Philippines-Talaud-Northern Moluccas (nr. 27, symbol: 2, 3) is shown by 17 species, viz. 15 final, of which 3 have been collected in Morotai only, and 2 provisional, both from Morotai.

Column III gives the numbers of species, the areas of which include one of the 46 connections or combinations of connections in such a way that they may be considered of importance for the phytogeography of the islands in question.

In Column IV the figures of the two preceding columns have been added, giving a total of 184 species (of which 38 from Morotai only), viz. 128 finals (28 from Morotai only) and 56 provisionals (10 Morotai).

Column V, finally, shows the frequency of any of the connections and combinations of connections in all areas, separately calculated for Talaud or for both Talaud and Morotai, and for Morotai only. These figures result from a simple addition of the numbers of species in whose area a given connection occurs. For instance, connection nr. 11 (symbol: 1, 2) occurs (cf. Column IV) in the nrs. 11 (2 species from Talaud), 13 (2 species from Morotai), 15 (2 species from Morotai), 17 (2 species from Talaud), 21 (1 species from Talaud), 23 (2 species from Talaud), 24 (1 species from Morotai), 25 (1 species from Talaud) and 26 (1 species from Talaud), the total frequency of the connection 1, 2 being, therefore, 9 in areas of species collected in Talaud or both in Talaud and Morotai

TABLE III.

Survey of species and areas of direct significance for the phytogeography of Talaud and (or) Morotai.

Nr.	Position of connection / Connection / Identification	II: This connection only (group VII. D) Final	Prov.	Total	III: Connection as an essential part of a larger area (groups VI. B, VII. B, VII. C) Final	Prov.	Total	IV: Totals of the columns II and III Final	Prov.	Total	V: Frequency of the connections in all areas [2]) Talaud or Tal. + Morotai Final	Prov.	Total	Morotai only Final	Prov.	Total
1	1	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	6	3	9	4	1	5
2	1a	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	20	9	29	5	1	6
3	2	10	16	26	1	—	1	11	16	27	55	30	85	12	5	17
4	3	5 (1)	4 (1)	9 (2)	5	4	9	10 (1)	8 (1)	18 (2)	77	27	104	13	6	19
5	4	(3)	—	(3)	—	—	—	(3)	—	(3)	37	11	48	6	2	8
6	4a	—	—	—	(6)	(2)	(8)	(6)	(2)	(8)	19	4	23	7	3	10
7	4c	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	1	2	3	—	—	—
8	4d	—	—	—	(4)	—	(4)	(4)	—	(4)	—	—	—	—	4	4
9	5	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	12	4	16	—	1	1
10	5a	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	8	1	9	—	—	—
11	1, 2	—	1	1	1	—	1	1	1	2	6	3	9	4	1	5
12	1a, 2	8	2	10	—	—	—	8	2	10	23	9	32	5	1	6
13	1, 2, 3	(1)	(1)	(2)	—	—	—	(1)	(1)	(2)	3	2	5	4	1	5
14	1a, 2, 3	9 (4)	6 (1)	15 (5)	—	—	—	9 (4)	6 (1)	15 (5)	13	7	20	5	1	6
15	1, 2, 3, 4	(2)	—	(2)	—	—	—	(2)	—	(2)	3	2	5	2	—	2
16	1a, 2, 3, 4	3	1	4	—	—	—	3	1	4	8	2	10	—	—	—
17	1, 2, 3, 4, 5	2	—	2	—	—	—	2	—	2	3	—	3	—	—	—
18	1a, 2, 3, 4, 5	1	—	1	—	—	—	1	—	1	3	—	3	—	—	—
19	1a, 2, 3, 4a	1	—	1	—	—	—	1	—	1	3	—	3	—	—	—
20	1a, 2, 3, 4, 4a	1	—	1	—	—	—	1	—	1	2	—	2	—	—	—
21	1, 2, 3, 4, 4c	—	1	1	—	—	—	—	1	1	—	1	1	—	—	—
22	1a, 2, 3, 4, 5, 5a	1	—	1	—	—	—	1	—	1	2	—	2	—	—	—
23	1, 1a, 2	2	—	2	—	—	—	2	—	2	3	1	4	1	—	1
24	1, 1a, 2, 3	(1)	—	(1)	—	—	—	(1)	—	(1)	1	1	2	1	—	1
25	1, 1a, 2, 3, 4	—	1	1	—	—	—	—	1	1	—	1	1	—	—	—
26	1, 1a, 2, 3, 4, 4a, 5, 5a	1	—	1	—	—	—	1	—	1	1	—	1	—	—	—
27	2, 3	15 (3)	(2)	17 (5)	—	—	—	15 (3)	(2)	17 (5)	34	11	45	13	5	18
28	2, 3, 4	(1)	—	(1)	1	—	1	2 (1)	—	2 (1)	15	6	21	3	1	4
29	2, 3, 4, 5	3	2 (1)	5 (1)	—	—	—	3	2 (1)	5 (1)	8	2	10	—	1	1
30	2, 3, 4, 5a	1	—	1	—	—	—	1	—	1	3	1	4	—	—	—
31	2, 3, 4, 5, 5a	—	1	1	—	—	—	—	1	1	2	1	3	—	—	—
32	2, 3, 4a	2 (1)	—	2 (1)	—	—	—	2 (1)	—	2 (1)	3	—	3	1	—	1
33	2, 3, 4, 4c	1	1	2	—	—	—	1	1	2	1	2	3	—	—	—
34	3, 4	15	1	16	—	2	2	15	3	18	36	11	47	3	1	4
35	3, 4a	7	3	10	4	1	5	11	4	15	19	4	23	—	—	—
36	3, 4, 4a	—	—	—	1	—	1	1	—	1	3	—	3	—	—	—
37	3, 4, 5	—	2	2	1	—	1	1	2	3	11	4	15	—	1	1
38	3, 4, 5a	1	—	1	1	—	1	2	—	2	7	1	8	—	—	—
39	3, 4, 5, 5a	—	—	—	2	—	2	2	—	2	4	1	5	—	—	—
40	3, 4a, 4b	3	—	3	—	—	—	3	—	3	3	—	3	—	—	—
41	4, 4b	—	(1)	(1)	—	—	—	—	(1)	(1)	—	—	—	—	1	1
42	4a, 4b	(1)	(1)	(2)	—	—	—	(1)	(1)	(2)	3	—	3	1	1	2
	Totals	101 (18)	47 (8)	148 (26)	27 (10)	9 (2)	36 (12)	128 (28)	56 (10)	184 (38)						
43	CT [1])	7	8	15	—	—	—	7	8	15						
44	CT + [1])	—	—	—	2	—	2	2	—	2						
45	BCT [1])	1	1	2	—	—	—	1	1	2						
46	BT [1])	1	—	1	—	—	—	1	—	1						
	Grand Total	110 (18)	56 (8)	166 (26)	29 (10)	9 (2)	38 (12)	139 (28)	65 (10)	204 (38)						

( ) Morotai only.
[1]) "Incomplete" areas of group VII B, as far as not considered in column II.
[2]) "Incomplete" areas excepted.

For explanation see text (pp. 124—125).

(6 finals and 3 provisionals), and 5 in areas of species collected in Morotai only (4 finals, 1 provisional).

Mainly two questions may be put forward in regard to the phytogeographical relations of the islands under consideration, viz. which areas are prevalent, and which floristic element prevails in the florae of Talaud and of Morotai?

Talaud.

As by far the greater part of the collection was made in this region, it is self-evident that the areas in which the connections 2 and 3 occur, are in the majority. These are the areas nrs. 3, 4 and 11—40. Of these the areas nrs. 3, 4, 12, 14, 27, 34, 35 and CT comprise each 10 or more species. It is certainly remarkable that the area:

Nr. 3, Talaud-Philippines, is found in as many as 27 out of 166 species, collected in Talaud. Next come the areas:
Nr. 34, Talaud-Northern Moluccas-New Guinea, with 18 species,
Nr. 4, Talaud-Northern Moluccas, with 16 species,
Nr. 35, Talaud-Northern and Southern Moluccas, with 15 species,
Nr. CT, Talaud-Celebes, with 15 species,
Nr. 27, Philippines-Talaud-Northern Moluccas, with 12 species,
Nr. 14, Celebes-Philippines-Talaud-Northern Moluccas, with 10 species, and
Nr. 12, Celebes-Philippines-Talaud, with 10 species,

making a total of 123 out of 166 species, whose areas cover a part of the narrow migration track from Celebes to New Guinea through the Philippines or at any rate through Talaud and the Moluccas.

As far as the frequencies of the connections are concerned, it is shown in Column V that in Talaud-species connection nr. 4 is prevailing, which points to a strong connection with the Northern Moluccas. However, connection nr. 2 (Talaud-Philippines) is a good second. The relatively high frequencies of the connections with New Guinea (nr. 5), with the Southern Moluccas (nr. 6) and with Polynesia (nr. 9) again point to a strong eastern relation of the Talaud flora, which is supported by the combinations nrs. 34, 35 and 37. It hardly needs further comment that connection nr. 2 and the combinations nrs. 27, 12, 28 and 14 are also fairly well represented.

Regarding the 35 species of group VII. B that are unknown from the Philippines (cf. p. 121), the possibility of a direct connection between Celebes and Talaud cannot be ignored from a merely phytogeographical point of view, as long as these species have not been detected in the Philippines. Such a connection cannot be confirmed by geological evidence but, although an indication of this kind should not be overestimated, it may be pointed out that the submarine Talaud geanticline (cf. *Fig. 2*) is running very close to the east-coast of North Celebes. In view of general principles concerning the phytogeographical relations of these parts (cf. Lam, l. c., 1938), only 1 out of these 35 species is evidently "improbable", viz. *Lygodium borneense,* which is only known from Borneo and from Talaud; 2 others, known from Borneo, Celebes and Talaud, might also be improbable, but of the remaining 32 (Celebes-Talaud, and Celebes-Talaud-

Moluccas) such an improbability cannot be stated on account of any definite evidence.

Proceeding to our second question concerning the prevailing floristic element, we may refer again to Table II, from which it appears that 524 of the Talaud species have been identified. Of these, the groups I—IV with 171 species altogether may be left out of consideration, although it may be safely assumed that many species of the groups III and IV have to be regarded representatives of the western element, relative to the Talaud flora. Irrelevant are further 71 species of group VII. A, 2 of VII. B which have not been considered in Table III, and 25 species from Table III belonging to the area-groups nrs. 16—22 and 25—27, which extend as much in one direction from Talaud as a centre as in the other.

Of the remaining 254 species 169 are representing the western element, viz.

of group V: 72 species (of which 13 W.),
of group VII. A: 26 species (all W.), and
of Table III: 71 species (nrs. 3, 11, 12, 14, 23, CT, CT +, BCT and BT).

The eastern element is represented by 85 species, viz.

of group VI. A: 14 species,
of group VI .B: 1 species (E.) which has not been considered in Table III, and
of Table III: 70 species (nrs. 4 and 28—40).

Even if the groups III and IV are left out, the result is that, as might have been expected, the western element in the Talaud flora is much stronger than the eastern one.

Morotai.

In view of the very small number of species collected in Morotai only, nothing definite can be said regarding the phytogeographical relations of this island. As far as can be stated from the figures in Table III (Column IV), the inter-Moluccan relations (nr. 6) and the relations with New Guinea (nrs. 5, 41 and 42) seem to be fairly strong, viz. 14 out of 36 species. On the other hand, 21 species have more western areas (nrs. 4, 8, 13, 14, 15, 24, 27 and 28).

As appears from Table II, 87 species have been identified from the Morotai material. Of these, 9 species of groups II—IV, 13 of group VII. A, 6 of group VII. B, 3 of group VII. C which have not been considered in Table III, and 9 of Table III (nrs. 6 and 29), are of no importance for the phytogeography of the island. Of the remaining 47 species, 39 represent the western element, viz.

of group V: 10 species (of which 1 W.),
of group VII. A: 8 species (all W.), and
of Table III: 21 species (nrs. 8, 13—15, 24, 27, 28 and 32).

The eastern element is represented by only 8 species, all of which are considered in Table III (nrs. 4, 5, 41 and 42). Therefore, as far as can be concluded from our poor data, also in Morotai the western element is strongly prevailing.

6. PRODUCTS.

It does not lie within the scope of the present paper to deal at some length with the economic side of the flora of Talaud and Morotai. As far as Talaud is concerned, we may, therefore, refer to the paper by Tergast on the agriculture and to that by Heringa on the timbers. Regarding Morotai, the information collected by us was too scanty to deserve special mention. General information may be found in Baretta's report on Halmahera and Morotai.

Yet, a few words may be added here in regard to the timbers of Talaud. In his paper, Heringa mentions native names only. As these are fairly constant and trustworthy as far as the well-known and valuable timbers are concerned, our list of native names and their latin equivalents (§ 7) may be of some use. Probably most, if not all of the names mentioned by Heringa were noted from information given by native experts, not actually controlled in the forest. Of these only the following are not mentioned in or do not agree with our list:

Heringa, l. c. p. 744:

Gofasa batoe = *malalao*. According to H. this should be *Lagerstroemia ovalifolia* T. & B., a species not collected by me (cf. De Clercq-Pulle, Nieuw Plantk. Woordenboek v. Ned.-Indië, 1927, n. 2330). Perhaps the native name *malalao* stands for *malalá'a* = *maralá'a* = *Pimeleodendron amboinicum*?

Sarotta. According to H. this should be *Vitex celebica* Koord. (*V. heterophylla* Roxb.), which I did not collect. The tree, collected by me under the name *saròtah*, was a *Terminalia*.

Pengoeana. Probably the same as our *pongóéan'a (Elmerrillia ovalis)*.

Heringa, l. c. p. 745:

Balasa, not in our list.

Awoenboela, not in our list.

Ramoe. Possibly the same as our (*áloe*) *rámoet'a* (*Cleistanthus myrianthus*)?

Apala, not in our list; cf. our *ampawa*?

On p. 746 Heringa says that ebony (*batoelíneh*) does not occur in Nenoesa. *Diospyros Rumphii* was, however, shown to me in Merampi.

In Garete, the forest reserve of the Nenoesa Islands, the following species were particularly pointed out to produce timber for proa construction: *ampáwa* (*Ochrosia oppositifolia*), *anggirían'a* (*Palaquium bataanense*), *antoála* (*Elaeocarpus* spec.), *asàsoe* (*Chisocheton* spec., n. 3204), *bitáwak'a* (*Calophyllum soulattri*), *laládon* (*Planchonella obovata*), *maíleh* (*Eugenia ? fastigiata*), *nátoh* (*Palaquium obtusifolium*), *tamaríseh* (*Terminalia* spec.; n. 3167). In Merampi, *nanítoe* (*Rhus rufa*) is also used for proa construction.

In Miangas, practically the only timber tree is *nátoh* (*Palaquium obtusifolium*), and it may be readily assumed that all specimens growing there, have been intentionally planted. For the rest, all timber is imported from elsewhere, particularly from Nenoesa, and for want of timber most of the houses are constructed of the stems of coconut trees.

7. LANGUAGES AND NATIVE NAMES.

The Talaud language belongs to the group of Philippine languages, in which also the tongues of Sangihe and of the Minahasa (N. Celebes) are inserted. This is apparent also in several plant names, as will be seen on comparison of the list given underneath with the native names given by Merrill (Enum. Phil. Flow. Plants).

The following remarks claim no philological value whatsoever. Therefore, for the phonetical spelling the Dutch language has been chosen as a basis in order to facilitate the use of the plant names and their comparison with those given in other publications, particularly on behalf of forestry purposes. Accordingly, the following directions should be consulted before reading this paragraph:

The stress, as far as known to me, has been marked by an accent, ´ on open vowels and on vowels in closed syllables (e. g. *ampáwa,* and *ángkang'a*), ` on dull-toned vowels, indicating a phonetical doubling of the following consonant (e. g. *asàsoe, aròsoh, pèlèta*).

a = always open (more or less as in banana), never like the English a
i in open syllables = a short ee
j = y in year
ng = one consonant (*a-oe-mà-ngan'a*)
ngg = ng + g (*a-ríng-ga*)
oe = u in true; the stress has, therefore, been indicated by a double accent (óé).

There are no diphthongs. Consecutive vowels always represent as many syllables (except, of course, in the case of oe which acts as one single vowel), e. g. *sam-pa-roe-á-i, mò-o-ng'a, ma-í-leh.*

The terminal consonant is often vocalized by an almost mute 'a. The l and the r are in many cases pronounced in almost the same way. This implies that in many names l and r may replace each other. Other sets of substituting consonants are b — p, b — w, d — l — r, m — b, k — t, etc. Examples are (plant names unless indicated otherwise):

bamboelóéda — pampoeróéda, babíne — wawíne (female), *dandíla — landíla — randíla, mariwoeàn'a — bariwoeàn'a, bínsak'a — bínsat'a.*

Particularly the last-named substitution is dialectic. According to Talens there are some six or eight dialects in the Talaud group, differing i. a. in the terminating consonant and in the terminal 'a, e. g.

	coconut	male
Sal., W. and S. Kab.	*nióéka*	*ésaka*
S. Karak., N. Kab.	*nióétja*	*ésatja*
C. Karakelong	*nióéta*	*ésata*
W. Karakelong	*nióéra*	*ésara*
Kaboeroeang	*nióéha*	*ésaha*
N. Kar., Nen., Miangas	*níoe*	*ésah (ésa')*

In the last-named dialect the ultimate syllable is substituted by a hamzah (light guttural g or h).

Among the plant names enumerated below numerous examples of these rules may be found.

Sometimes a similar substitution is found in the middle or in the beginning of a name, e. g. *atsoeára — sansoeára, síkat'a — sírak'a, arangíjoh — sangíjoh.*

In other cases we may speak of a metathesis, such as *alabóé'oe — la'abóé'oe, lariàsan — laransián, sa'ansáwa — sasáwa'a.*

The following list may give some idea of the variations found in the same name:

aléwat'a — aléwak'a
aloebàtoe — aloewàtoe
amaloeàn'a — loeàn'a
aníta — ánih
arámpoe — aràpoe
aròsoh — araròsoh
banangíran'a — dalangíran'a — lalangíran'a
bíndoek'a — bíndoe
boelít'a — boerít'a
dalíta — laíta — laríta
daróénoe — laróénoe — natóénoe
déisah — ráisah — deh
iáma — kiáma
kanoembóélan'a — panimbóéran'a
laládon — lolòtan
laransiàn'a — lariasàn'a
lariángoh — dariángoh
maratálam'a — maratálang'a
nàki — nàti — nári — nátji — màti
papíri — rapíri
samparoeái — tamparoeáoe
tamalísa — tamaríseh — saliseh.

In compound names the genetive is expressed by *oe* (of) after a closed syllable, e. g. *óéwak'oe piápi* (*óéwak* of Mt. Piapi), by *'m* or *'n* after an open one, e. g. *lèo'mbáwi* (*lèo* of the pigs), by *k* after a *ng* and before a vowel, e. g. *daràmang'kahoerángan* (*daràmang* of the forest).

The native names of plants were taken from native experts. Usually only few people among the population of a village are particularly familiar with the local plants, their names and their use. Before starting any collecting trip, my first care was, therefore, to ask for a reliable and trustworthy expert who was willing to accompany me and give me his continuous advice. In the localities 1 and 2, where I collected my first knowledge of the Talaud flora and in which I spent almost a month, I was so lucky as to come into touch with an elderly man, named Zakeos, from Beo, who proved to be thoroughly familiar with the Talaud flora and whose perfect seriousness was a guarantee for the reliability of his information, on the basis of which I was able to appreciate that, given by the experts in the other islands. Yet, I deemed it necessary to check, recheck and countercheck this information repeatedly, as it is a well-known fact that a white man, not familiar with the native tongue, may make a fool of himself by jotting down as native names the equivalents of such non-committal descriptions as: "big tree", "climber", "plant with red

flowers", not to speak of suspicious jokes or of such colloquialisms as: "I don't know", or even: "that's none of your business!" I am not sure that I have entirely avoided the last-named category, e. g. *ára'ápa* for some terrestrial ferns seems somewhat suspect, as *apa* means "which" or "what", and perhaps *amaloeàn'a* for *Champereia manillana* is not genuine either, since *a'aloeàn'a* means "some tree" (*áloe* = tree or timber). But it is quite obvious that some of the names given to me are belonging to the first-named category: *a'áloem bíran'a* and *ápoet'oe aroembíran'a*, for instance, names given to several lianas, probably mean nothing else but climbing or twining plant and *wáring garàtoe* for *Myrmecodia* means only house of ants. It is probable that there are a number of other names of which the non-specific nature was not detected, for concerning the Talaud language I am a stranger in Jerusalem. Without any philological training I had to work with some few words picked up during my stay in Talaud and for the rest I had to relay on the papers by Talens-Adriani and by Steller which are not easy to handle by a layman, who is not able to appreciate the value of the numerous prefixes, infixes, suffixes and reduplications and the many ways of composed words in which the Talaud language is so rich. This is the more so, since no vocabularies have been published but the two, quoted by Talens (l. c., p. 2) and thoroughly disapproved by Steller (l. c., p. 2—3), and a third, not quoted by either of these authors, viz. A. J. F. Jansen, Vergelijkende Woordenlijst van de talen en de dialecten in de Residentie Menado (Tijdschr. Ind. Taal-, Land- en Volkenk., N. S. I., 1855, 521—548) in which 146 Talaud words are given, the scientific value of which I cannot estimate.

Consequently, the significance of a great number of names was inaccessable to me and of some others it was difficult to appreciate the real value. In view of what has been said above, the specific value is, for instance, somewhat suspect in names alluding to some demon (*paliàn'a*) such as *bóésa'oe palián* (banana of devil) for *Dendrobium* with banana-like pseudobulbs, *áloe'mpaliáng* (devil's weed) for *Begonia* species and *títoe oe palián* (*títoe* = ?) for a palm. These names may be genuine as well as a successful attempt of pulling the leg of that silly Westerner with his unquenchable thirst of information. Next to the demons, the pigs (*bàbi* or *wáwi*) may be suspected to act as a "deus ex machina". The following names may be or may be not genuine: *binóénga'mbàbi* (when asked, it was asserted that this tree, *Croton argyratus*, should thrive on boars' excrements), *lèo'mbáwi* (*Dracontomelum*), *saráwat'oe wáwi* (*Dioscorea*), *ambóéroenga'mbàbi* (*Scoparia*), *láa'mbàbi* (*Jussieua*). Some other animals occur also in the names, e. g. *dandíla mèoh* (*dandíla* = tongue, *mèoh* = cat), *tolenàsoe* (*tóleh* = tail, *àsoe* = dog), *larasiàn'oe paní'i* (figs eaten by *paní'i* or *paníki* = bats or flying foxes), *nàki'mbaráwo* (*nàki* = Canarium, *baráwo* = mouse), *nàki'mpóéneh* (*póéneh* = a bird), *ánoe óése'a* (*óése'a* = the cuscus, *Phalanger maculatus*, said to occur only in Salebaboe, not in the other Talaud Islands), *áring kámbing* (*kambing* = goat), *tengtaramiseán* (trees or shrubs the fruits of which are eaten by small birds called *salamisi*) and *óéta oe oedároh* (= hair of horse) for the horse hair blight. Most of the last-mentioned names seem quite acceptable, since all languages have similar vernacular names.

Next to these the following words were obvious.

Ésat'a (male) and *wawíne* (female) are often used in addition to another name. These names have, of course, nothing in common with our interpretation relative to sex. They are found in numerous vernaculars even in Europe as is still apparent in such botanical names as *Dryopteris Filix-mas* and *Athyrium Filix-femina*. Basing himself on his native informants Rumphius makes an extensive use of these conceptions, the signification of which seems to be pretty variable. The distinction sometimes applies to a difference in habit, hairiness, spines or no spines, within the same Linnean species, e. g. *lalónda ésat'a* (spiny) and *l. wawíne* (a very courteous name for the spineless form of *Acanthus ilicifolius*). In this and in other cases, the relation is accepted by official botany, but the first name includes a larger group than the species, e. g. *nanàsi ésat'a* (*Rhizophora mucronata*, but also *Bruguiera conjugata*?), and *n. wawíne* (*Bruguiera conjugata*). However, the name *nanàsi* is also given both to the pineapple and to *Gahnia aspera*! In the last-named case there is no systematic relation whatsoever, and the same may be said, for instance, relative to the name *tengtaramiseán* (*Astronia* and *Maesa*), *t. ésak'a* (*Melastoma*), *t. wawíne* (*Deeringia* and *Saurauia*), which is perhaps due to the fact that the first name means: fruits eaten by the *salamisi* bird.

Another set of additions often met with is *oeróéne* (*oelóéne*) and *(m)ahoerángan*. According to Talens (l. c., p. 11) the last-named word, meaning forest, should be derived from a Sangihe word meaning old. Its actual signification, however, is secondary forest, in contradiction to *oeróéne*, which, properly speaking, means the interior, which i. c. stands for primaeval forest. In many cases the addition of either *oeróéne* (e. g. *goeràla'a oeróéne*) or *ahoerángan* (e. g. *sòsop ahoerángan*) may be noncommittal, in some others it may be, that of two related species one is characteristic for the primary, the other for the secondary forest but of this no unequivocal examples came to my knowledge. In *Hernandia ovigera*, *oeróéne* evidently means interior, in contradistinction to the common coastal species *Hernandia peltata* Meissn.

Still another distinction is made by the addition *bátoe* (rock) or *bówo'mbátoe* (*bowóne* or *wowóne* = mountain), so as to indicate that the species in question is preferably growing on rocky soil, e. g. *bitáwak bátoe* (*bitáwak* = *Calophyllum soulattri*, *b. batoe* = *Planchonella firma*; the relation between these two constant names is not clear) and *aráboe wówo'mbátoe* for *Pteris vittata*.

It is not surprising that the quite unusual flora of Mt. Piapi has been puzzling the natives. There are several plants, which are given the epitheton *oe piápi* or *'mpiápi*, e. g. *óéwak'oe piápi* (*óéwak* = *Flagellaria*) for a *Dendrobium* and *ámi'mpiápi* (*ámih* = rice; the name is given to *Themeda gigantea*). In the latter case there is at least some relation, but in the former the allusion to *Flagellaria* is quite obscure. In other cases the relation is equally indistinct. When asked for the name of a plant which is of no use to the natives, the reply is often the name of a well-known plant with which it shows a faint resemblance, actually or in the mind of the informant, e. g. *peràpat'a* for *Wikstroemia indica* (Mt. Piapi) as well as for *Sonneratia caseolaris* (sea-shore). It has been suggested that

the name of Mt. Piapi should be derived from this plant (*Wikstroemia*), since another name both for *Wikstroemia* and for *Sonneratia* (and other mangrove trees such as *Avicennia*) is *api-api* (*api* [Malay] = fire; the wood of these trees is demanded for fire-wood). An exception to these incongruities is the name *panimbóéran'a* which is given both to the common sea-shore shrub *Scaevola frutescens* and to the related but quite different Piapi shrub *Sc. micrantha*.

Finally, I came across the following significations:

áloe('m)ítoem'a (*Diospyros hebecarpa*) from *áloe* = wood and *maí-toem'a* = black.

bamboelóéda (*bamboeróéda, pampoeróéda, pampóéloe, pampoelóéta, pampoeróéda*), according to Steller (l. c., p. 10) a tree with much "*poeloe*" = a sticky juice, i. e. the milky juice. The name is given both to *Alstonia scholaris* and to *Euphorbia Atoto* and *E. serrulata*. However, the name of *bambalóéda* was given to *Timonius celebicus*, a tree which does not possess milky juice. It is possible that in this case the name alludes to the pubescence of the young leaves and of the flowers (*bamboeloe* = hairs).

marimbòsa; according to Steller (l. c., p. 36), this is a tree, resembling *Citrus* (*bòsa*). Of the three plants occurring in our list, the name is probably particularly applicable to the two Rutaceae (*Micromelum* and *Zanthoxylum*), but *Ximenia* also resembles *Citrus* by its strong axillary thorns.

nanioe, a Nenoesa name given to *Spathoglottis plicata* (in addition to the name *sasáwa'a*, given to several terrestrial orchids) because of the leaves which should resemble those of the coconut palm (*nioe*).

padóé'oet oe papóéa (*Oldenlandia pterita*), said to signify weed of a hole or pit in the ground.

radóé'oet oe manáro (*Ageratum conyzoides*); *radóé'oet* = *padóé'oet* = weed, of Manado. My native informant told me that this adventitious plant should have been introduced, apparently from Manado, in about 1890.

There are a number of other names, the significance of which might be guessed, but with my very poor knowledge of the language it seems unwise to make any suggestions concerning these.

Concerning the specificity, constancy and reliability of the native names, I may add that these are the greater, as more useful plants are considered. The same may be stated in other native tongues and the phenomenon is self-evident. Accordingly, the names of trees and also of several common herbs are often very constant and reliable though, of course, they do not always cover the same "taxon" as a white botanist sees it.

Among the lianas, climbers, herbs and epiphytes the non-committal and group names are already more numerous, but plants which are particularly conspicuous from some point of view (taste, smell or medical use) are often specifically named. Of all groups, the epiphytes, already poorly represented in Talaud, are most poorly known to the natives.

List of Talaud plant-names.

In this list the following abbreviations have been used: H. name, mentioned by Heringa, l. c.; K. West Karakelong (Loc. 1 and 2); Kb. Kaboeroeang (Loc. 4 and 5); M. Miangas (Loc. 9); N. Nenoesa (Loc. 10 and 11); P. Mt. Piapi (Loc. 7 and 8); S. Salebaboe (Loc. 3 and 6); St. name, mentioned by Steller, l. c.

For the pronunciation see p. 128.

I. Trees and Shrubs.

An * asterisk denotes that this tree was indicated as yielding a valuable timber, mostly for house but also for proa construction; a double ** asterisk or a *** triple one indicates the most demanded (house and) proa timbers.

a'asíli (K.) — Couthovia celebica
abá('a) (K., P.) — Rauwolfia amsoniifolia; also (but erroneously?) for Lepiniopsis ternatensis (K.); see also awá'a
ababá'a (K.) — Pandanus latissimus
*abambáng'a (K., Kb.) — Litsea Forstenii
abólo'a (K.) — Pittosporum ferrugineum
abólo'a (K., N.) — Geniostoma celebicum
alabóé'oe, alawóé'oe (N.), see la'abóé'oe
aladóng'a (K., P., S.) — Eugenia panduriformis
aléwak'a (S.), aléwat'a (K.) — Eugenia saligna; also (but erroneously?) for Planchonella firma (K.)
alóéba (P., S., Kb., N.) — Pimeleodendron amboinicum
aloebàtoe (N.), see aloewàtoe
aloelá'a (P.) — Vaccinium Vidalii
áloe('m)ítoem'a (S., N.) — Diospyros hebecarpa
áloe rámoet'a (K.) — Cleistanthus myrianthus
aloewàtoe (M.) — Triphasia trifolia
„ (S.) — Blumeodendron paucinervium
amaloeàn'a (S.) — Champereia manillana
ambíra (K.) — Ficus rudis (also Villebrunea rubescens?)
améad'a (K.) — Pimeleodendron amboinicum
***amiséan(g)'a (K., S., Kb.) — Mezzettia spec. (n. 2898)
amiséan'a batoe (K.) — Mitrephora spec. (n. 2582), Polyalthia celebica
amómas'a (K., S.) — Sterculia Treubii
ampáwa (N.) — Ochrosia oppositifolia
anàman (N.) — Pandanus spec. (not collected)
andaliára (M.) — Clerodendrum Buchanani
andénak'a (Kb.) — Kleinhovia hospita
anggaliára (N.), see sub IV.
*anggirían'a (N.) — Palaquium bataanense
anggóésip'a (K., P.) — Antidesma spec. (n. 2785), Baccaurea javanica, B. spec. (n. 2657)
ángkang'a (K.) — Schefflera ?confinis
angkaráha (M.) — Colubrina asiatica
ánih (N.), anít'a (K., S.) — Colona scabra
anóéwoek'a (K.), anóéwoet'a (K.) — Gomphandra javanica
ansarángi (S.) — Dolichandrone spathacea
ansoeára (M.), see sánsoearàn'a
antáloet'a (K.) — Nauclea mitragyna
antamát'a (S., N.) — Elaeocarpus spec. (n. 3120)
„ (N.) — Vavaea amicorum
antoála (K., S., Kb., N.) — Elaeocarpus dolichostylus, E. multiflorus
antóéwoe (N.) — Claoxylon longifolium, Cyathocalyx ?acuminatus

aramáloe (N.) — Champereia manillana
arambáhi (N.) — Planchonella nitida
arámpoe (N.) — Allophylus Cobbe
arangíjoh (K.), see sangíjoh
aràpoe (N., M.), see arámpoe
ararintok'a (Kb.) — Allophylus Cobbe
**araróéra (N.) — Guettarda speciosa
araròsoh (N.) — Pimeleodendron amboinicum
aríngga (K.) — Cinnamomum spec. (n. 2903)
arisóésoe oeróéne (K.) — Schuurmansia Theophrasta
arombáhi, see arambáhi
aròsoh (P., M.), see araròsoh
asimbóéroeng'a (Kb.) — Ficus ampelas
asàsoe (Kb.) — ?Chisocheton spec. (n. 3204)
atántas'a (S.) (cf. same name sub II) — Ficus celebica
atóéwoet'a (K.) — Cyathocalyx ?acuminatus
atomòning'a (K.) — Alsophila Fenicis
atsoeára (M.), atsoearàn'a (N.) } see sánsoearàn'a
aoemánga(n'a) (S., Kb., N.) — Alchornea rugosa
**awá'a (K., S.) — Anthocephalus macrophyllus, Artocarpus elastica; see also abá'a
*ba'ánah (K.) — Litsea Perrottetii
*ba'aròsa (S.) — Rauwolfia javanica
bábah (N.), see ababá'a
**báloek'a (S., Kb.) — Pterospermum celebicum
bambak'a (K.), bambat'a (K.) — Melochia umbellata
*bambalóéda (K., Kb.) — Timonius celebicus
bamboelóéda (K., S.), bamboeróéda — Alstonia scholaris
bánah (M.) — Antidesma celebicum
„ (K., Kb.) — Glochidion zeylanicum, var. malayanum
banangíran'a (N.), see lalangíran'a
barabíran'a (K., S.) — Leucosyke capitellata
barámbang'a (K., Kb., N.) — Eugenia ?fastigiata
bároe (K., S., M.) — Hibiscus tiliaceus
batoelíneh (Kb., N.) — Diospyros Rumphii
biàk'a (K.), biàt'a (K.) — Alangium spec. (n. 2854)
bináwin'a (K., P., S.) — Endospermum spec. (n. 2873), Macaranga Mappa, M. spec. (ns. 2859, 2894)
bíndoe(k'a) (N.) — Tournefortia argentea
binóéng'a (K., N.) — Macaranga Tanarius
binóénga'mbàbi (K.) — Croton argyratus
bínsak'a (S., Kb.), bínsat'a (S.), see bíntas'a
bíntas'a (K.) — Ficus variegata
bitáwa (N.), bitáwak'a (S., Kb., P.), bitáwat'a (K.) — Calophyllum Inophyllum, C. soulattri
bitáwak bátoe (S.) — Planchonella firma
bítoen (N.) — Barringtonia asiatica
boeároh (K.) — Barringtonia racemosa
boeàs'a (K., S., N.) — Ficus leucantatoma
boelít'a, see boerít'a
bóéloeng'a, see bóéroeng'a
boenála (S.) — Chasalia curviflora
*boenároh (Kb.) — Scolopia ?spinosa
boeralá'a (K.) — Villebrunea rubescens
boeràn'a (S.) — Pisonia sylvestris
boerít'a (K., P.) — Garcinia Morella, G. rhizophoroides, G. sizygifolia
***bóéroeng'a (K., S.) — Bischofia javanica

boewíha (H.)
boewís'a (K., S., Kb.) } — Koordersiodendron pinnatum
bòsa (S., St.) — Citrus spec.
dalangíran'a (H.), see lalangíran'a
dalíta (K.), see laríta
dandámi (N.) = ? dendómeh
dandí'it (K.), see sub IV.
dandíla (d. mèoh) (K., S., N., M.) (cf. same name sub II) — Ehretia microphylla
dára (N.) — Desmodium umbellatum
dàra(t'a) (K., N.) — Allophylus Cobbe
dariángoh (H.), see lariángoh
daróénoe (M.), see sub IV.
deh (N.)
déisah (K.) } see ráisah
dendómeh (M.) — Pipturus argenteus
*dóéngoel'a (S.) — Eugenia spec. (n. 3098)
ganggáil'a (P.) (cf. same name sub II) — Plectronia spec. (n. 3294)
garoeat'a (K.) — Rubus fraxinifolius
**gégeh (Kb.)
géheh (K., S., Kb.) } — Pometia spec. (n. 2982)
genémoh (Malay) — Gnetum gnemon
góémak'a (H.)
góémat'a (K., P.) } — Palaquium luzoniense
góémak'oe sángik'a (Kb.)
góémat'oe sángit'a (K., P.) } — Planchonella firma
góénoe (K.) — Antidesma Cumingii
goeràla'a (g. oeróéne) (K.) — Saurauia spec. (ns. 2638, 2883)
goro(gora) pantai (Malay; pantai = sea-shore) — Eugenia ?fastigiata
iáma (K., S.) — Inocarpus edulis
intámin (Malay) — Diospyros hebecarpa
kanoembóélan'a (K.), see panimbóéran'a
kiáma (M.), see iáma
kírah-kírah (K.) — mangrove tree, not collected (Xyloearpus spec.?)
la'abóé'oe (Kb.) — Strombosia philippinensis
la'abàn'a
la'awàn'a } (K., P.) — Phaleria urens
*lábah (K.) — Bridelia glauca, Matthaea sancta
**lábah (S.) — Symplocos spec. (n. 3097)
labéa (St.) — Carica Papaya L.
láhoe (K.) — Myristica ?celebica
laíta (K.), see laríta
làkas'a (St.) — ?("iron-wood")
laládon (N.) — Planchonella obovata
lála ejàn'a (K.) — Alsophila glauca
lalagàlan'a (K.) — Mussaenda aff. philippica
lalamóéran'a (K.) — Breynia cernua
lalangíran'a (K., S., Kb.) — Canangium odoratum
lalónda ésat'a (spiny)
„ wawíne (spineless) } (K.) — Acanthus ilicifolius
lampapèga (H.) — Melia Azedarach L.
lampàsia (K., Kb.) — Turpinia pomifera
lanángoh (K.), see lariángoh
landíla (l. mèoh), see dandíla
langatòra (K., S., Kb.) — Arthrophyllum diversifolium
„ (P.) — Tetraplasandra Koordersii
lángi (M.)
langík'a (K., S., Kb.) } — Albizzia saponaria
lángjas (N.) — Ficus spec. (n. 2535)
lángoe (K.) — Pandanus spec. (not collected)
lángoe ádoe (S.) — Gnetum gnemon
***lanóéang'a (K.) — Terminalia Copelandi
laragáran'a, see lalagáran'a

laramóéran'a, see lalamóéran'a
laràn'a (K., P., S., Kb., N.) — Horsfieldia glabra, H. novoguineensis
larangíran'a, see lalangíran'a
laransiàn'a (K., Kb., N.) — Acalypha amentacea
laransiàn'a oeróéne (K.) — Mallotus ricinoides
lara(n)siàn'oe paní'i(paníki) (S., Kb.) — Ficus pubinervis
larapéan'a (S., Kb., N.) — Pleomele spec. (n. 3075)
laràteh (N.) — Pseuderanthemum spec. (n. 3437)
lári (M.) — Excoecaria Agallocha
lariángoh (K., M.) — Parkia javanica
lariàsan (N.) — Ficus spec. (n. 3427)
lariasàn'oe paní'i (S.), see laransiàn'oe paní'i
larimóéta (M., N.) — Breynia cernua
laripàtoe (K., S., N.) — Boerlageodendron serratifolium
larita (K.) — Avicennia marina, Ceriops Roxburghiana, Pongamia pinnata
laróénoe (N.), see sub IV.
la'tsi(n) (N.) — Garcinia tetrandra
lawéa (M.) — Sterculia comosa
*lawéang'a (S., Kb., M.) — Macaranga triloba
lendeh (K.) — Mallotus tiliifolius
**lèo (S.) — Pometia tomentosa
lèo'mbáwi (K., S.) — Dracontomelum dao
*ligisàt'a (S.) — Euonymus javanica
lilòka oeróéne (K.) — Hernandia ovigera
limbáloh (K.) — Oroxylon indicum Vent.
limbawóéta (K.) — Cerbera manghas
limbawòtang (K.) — Polyscias Rumphiana
límoe (N. Kar., St.) — Citrus spec.
língka oewíng'a (K.) — Artocarpus reticulata
linóék'a (P.) — Podocarpus neriifolia
**linsánad'a (K., S.) — Nothaphoebe umbelliflora
linsánad'a améada (P.) — Litsea spec. (n. 3314)
loeàn'a (Kb.), see amaloeàn'a
loeáran'a (S.) — Dillenia spec. (n. 3072)
lóéi (N.) — Sterculia ceramica
lóétoet'a (K.) — Pometia pinnata
lolòtan (P.) — Planchonella obovata
lóro (M.), see sub IV.
maíleh (M.) — Eugenia saligna
malalá'a, see maralá'a
malètah (K.) — Rinorea amboinensis
malimpètan'a (K.) — Lunasia amara
maliwáoe (H.), see mariwáoe
malóéntoh (P.) — Eugenia cymosa
maloempèt'a (K.) — Psychotria spec. (1)
mamáli (K.) — Leea aculeata, L. javanica
mamáli ésak'a (Kb.) } — Leea acuminata
„ wawíne (S.) }
mamántoe (K., N.) — Cyclostemon Minahassae
manái (N.) }
*manáik'a (S.) } — Millettia spec. (n. 3123)
*manáit'a (S., Kb.) }
mandalíroeng'a (K., P.) — Trema amboinensis
mángga ahoerángan (Kb., N.) — Arthrophyllum diversifolium
mangkóédoe (K.) — Morinda citrifolia
maniáoh (K.) — Cyathocalyx pacuminatus
maralá'a (S., Kb., N.) — Pimeleodendron amboinicum
maràm'a (K., Kb.) (cf. naràm'a) — Melanolepis multiglandulosa
marapángi (N.) — Ficus spec. (not collected)
maratálam'a } (K.) — Evodia glabra, E. minahassae
maratálang'a }
marimbòs'a (K.) — Ximenia americana

marimbòs'a (S.) — Micromelum minutum
„ (P.) — Zanthoxylum Avicennae
maringkóépa (K., S.) — Eugenia spec. (n. 2623)
marísin karéa'a (K., P., Kb., N.) — Buchanania arborescens
*mariwáoe (S., Kb.) — Eugenia calubcob
màti'mpóéneh (K., S.), see nàki'mpóéneh
memàna'a (St.) — Areca Catechu L.
menái (N.) — Eugenia spec. (n. 3442)
míndang'a (K., S.) — Macaranga hispida
mò'ong'a (K.) — Terminalia spec. (n. 2824)
*nàkeh, *nàki (K., S., Kb.) — Canarium commune
nàki adío — Canarium commune with small fruit
„ bahéwa — „ „ „ large „
nàki'mbaráwo (K., P., Kb.) — Canarium asperum
nàki'mbawái (K., S., Kb.) — Ormosia calavensis
nàki'mpasá'an (P.) — Planchonella oxyedra
nàki'mpóéneh (S., Kb.) — Canarium balsamiferum
nanàsi (M.) — Bruguiera cylindrica
nanàsi ésat'a (K.) — Bruguiera conjugata, Rhizophora mucronata
„ wawíne (K.) — Bruguiera conjugata
nanítoe (K., P., S., Kb., N.) — Rhus rufa
nàra('a) (N., M.), naràm'a (S.) (cf. maràm'a) — Melanolepis multiglandulosa
nári'mbaráwo (N.), see nàki'mbaráwo
nàti (K.), see nàki
nàti'mbaráwo (K., M.), see nàki'mbaráwo
nátji (H.), see nàki
natóénoe (K.), see sub IV.
**nátoh (K., N., M.) — Palaquium obtusifolium
ngíra (M.) — Pemphis acidula
nío (K., P., S.) — Gynostylus spec. (ns. 2856, 2906)
níoe, nióék'a (St.) — Cocos nucifera L.
nirád'a (P.) — Decaspermum spec. (n. 3278)
nóénoe'a (K., S., Kb.) — Ficus procera
nóénoe banáoe (S.) — Ficus spec. (n. 3168)
nóhnah (K., S.) — Ficus botryocarpa
nonáng'a (S.) — Cordia Myxa
noríng'a (K., Kb.) — Pisonia umbellifera
oelóék'a (K.), óéroe (M.) — Artocarpus communis
omín'a (K.) (cf. same name sub IV) — Antirrhoea microphylla
pàdeh (p. ahoerángan) (K., S.) — Ficus heteropoda, F. subulata
pampára wawíran'a (K.) — Graptophyllum pictum
pamperóéda (K.), pampoelóéta (K.) (cf. same name sub IV), pampoeróéda (S.), see bamboelóéda
panambóéri (N., M.) — Ficus retusa
pándan'a (P.) — Pandanus tectorius
panggamóéil'a (K.) — Garcinia cornea
panimbóéran'a (N.) — Scaevola frutescens
„ (P.) — Scaevola micrantha
panimbóéri (M.), see panambóéri
pansaráng'a (K.) — Clerodendrum Buchanani
papángi'nàsoe (S.) — Crataeva religiosa
papára rawíran'a (K.), see pampára wawíran'a
**papíri (K., S.) — Eugenia spec. (ns. 2886, 2986)
párang'a (K., S.) — Barringtonia racemosa
*parabóénoet'a (S.), parawóénoe (N.), *parawóénoet'a (S.) — Aglaia ganggo

peránti (K.) — Homalanthus populneus
paràpat'a (K.) — Sonneratia caseolaris
„ (P.) — Wikstroemia indica
péleh (N., M.) — Ficus ?kallicarpa
pèleh, pelèta (S.) — Ficus subulata
pilápi (K.) — Cleistanthus myrianthus
pilíneh (M.), piríneh (N.) — Rapanea densiflora
póéwah (M.) (cf. boeàs'a) — Ficus leucantatoma
polòtan'a (K.) — Gymnacranthera Ibutii
**pongóéan'a (S.) — Elmerrillia ovalis
posi-posi (Malay) — Sonneratia caseolaris, Wikstroemia indica
raba'mpóéneh (P., N.) — Eugenia ?fastigiata
rabóéa (K.) — Mischophloeus paniculatus
ráisah (K.) — Pandanus spec. (n. 2992)
rámoet'a (P.), see áloe rámoet'a
randíla (r. mèoh), see dandíla
rapíri (K.) (cf. papíri) — Eugenia spec. (n. 2665)
riboesára (K.) — Pittosporum ferrugineum
riníta (K., S.) — Ficus Minahassae
saédeh (K., S.) — Gnetum gnemon
salingámbang (K.) — Jatropha Curcas L.
salíseh (cf. tamaríseh) — Terminalia spec. (n. 3370)
**samái (S., Kb.) — Bridelia minutiflora
samparoeái, see tamparoeáoe
sangíjoh (K., S., Kb.) — Evodia latifolia, Melicope triphylla
sánsoearàn'a (K., Kb., M.) — Commersonia Bartramia
sarái (K.) — Laportea spec. (n. 3007)
sároempaníran'a (S.) — Dalbergia ferruginea
saroeràn'a (S.) = ? sánsoearàn'a
sároh (K., N., M.) — Premna corymbosa
**saròtah (K., S.) — Terminalia spec. (n. 2884)
sasáli'mbanáran'a (P.) — Eugenia cymosa
sawòwoh (M.) — Lumnitzera littorea
sengíjoh, see sangíjoh
séra (M.) — Morinda citrifolia
siàpoe (K., S.) — Trichospermum eriopodum
***síkat'a (Kb.), ***síra (N.), ***sírak'a (S.) — Intsia bijuga
soepángka asoewàn'a (S.) — Clerodendrum Minahassae
sóéwi (N., M.) — Glycosmis pentaphylla
sóéwing'a (K., Kb.) — Ixora talaudensis
sóéwing'oe oeróéne (K.) — Discocalyx silvestris
sómbah (K.) — Clerodendrum inerme
sòsop (K.) — Boehmeria clidemioides, Maoutia Puya
sòsop ahoerángan (K.) — Pipturus incanus
tabóéroh (K.) — Cyclostemon littoralis
tahoelímpat'a (K., S., Kb., P.), tahoerímpa (N.), tahoerímpat'a (K., S., Kb., P.) — Cinnamomum celebicum, Litsea accedens, L. Forstenii
tamalísa (H.), see tamaríseh
*tamaríseh (S., Kb., N.) — Terminalia spec. (n. 3167)
*tamparoeáoe (K., P., S., Kb.) — Lepiniopsis ternatensis
**taná'a (Kb.) — Eugenia ?Everettii
tananáloep'a (K., S.) — Geunsia pentandra
taniroeàn'a (K.) — Buchanania arborescens, Campnosperma ?oxyrhachis
tara'óéoe (N.) — Antidesma ghaesembilla
taráoe'oe (K.) — Osbornia octodonta
taròtoh (K., Kb.) — Endospermum spec. (n. 2728)
tatimbàkas'a (K.) — Memecylon costatum

tatimbatára (K.) — Cinnamomum spec. (not collected)
tàtoe (N.)
tatóél'a (Kb.) } — Garuga floribunda
tatónta (N.) — Ficus spec. (n. 3452)
tènggeh (P.) — Fagraea ?ternatana
tengtaramiseàn'a (K.) — Astronia macrophylla, Maesa tetandra
tengtaramiseán ésak'a (S.) — Melastoma polyanthum
„ wawíne (S.) — Deeringia polysperma
„ „ (K.) — Saurauia spec. (n. 2754)
tipóéroe (K., P.) — Artocarpus communis
títoe oe palián (K.) — Palmarum spec. (n. 2916)
tóétoeng'a (K., S.) — Myristica ?celebica
*tóleh (K., P., S., Kb.) — Alphitonia sizyphoides
tolenàsoe (K.) — Codiacum variegatum
„ (P.) — Styphelia moluccanum
wáloek'a (K.), see báloek'a
wároe, see bároe
**wároh (K., S.) — Duabanga moluccana
wawáni (M.) — Diospyros maritima
wíndoe (M.), see bíndoe(k'a)

II. Lianas and Climbers (Hemiparasites inclusive).

a'áloem bíran'a (S.)
„ wíran'a (K.) } — Connarus spec. (n. 3005), Jasminum suberosum
ála'oewàn'a (K.), see ára'oewàn'a
ánoe óése'a (S.) — Stephania hernandiifolia
anóéwoe (M.) (cf. same name sub IV) — Schefflera elliptica
aoeríta (K.) — Cissus spec. (n. 2484), Columella corniculata
apobóéroea (K.) — Cissus hastata, Hoya sussuela
apóékoeng'a (S.) — Ipomoea congesta
ápoet'oe aroembíran'a (K.) — Myxopyrum ovatum
ápoet'oe la'áwan'a (K.) — Strychnos spec. (n. 3333)
ára'oewàn'a (K.) — Epipremnopsis spec. (n. 2734), Pothos Rumphii, Scindapsus Cuscuaria
atántas'a (K.) (cf. same name sub I) — Ficus spec. (n. 2538)
bàgeh (K.) — Pueraria pulcherrima, P. Thunbergiana
baránggoh (K., P.) — Gnetum cuspidatum
bári-bári (M.) — Cassytha filiformis
bariwoeàn'a (K.) (cf. same name sub IV) — Ipomoea gracilis, I. tiliacea, Lygodium borneense, Tylophora Perrottetiana
bindóé'a (K.) — Medinilla pterocaula
boerá'an'a (K.) — Merremia peltata
dalàm'a, see daràm'a
dandíla (K.) (cf. same name sub I) — Medinilla pterocaula
daràm'a
daràmang'kahoerángan } (K.) — Piper abbreviatum, P. spec. (n. 2681)
ganggáila (g. ahoerángan) (K.) — Randia multiflora, Uncaria longiflora, U. spec. (n. 2621)
garànap'a (K.) — Dalbergia meneoides or Derris heterophylla (collected under the same number)
garoeat'a see sub I.
gíntoh (K.) — Lygodium circinnatum
kamánid'a (K.) — Calamus spec. (n. 2936)
lalagálan'a (K.), see sub I.
láling'oe àsoe (S.) — Piper abbreviatum
landèrong'a (K.) — Cissus nodosa, Tournefortia sarmentosa
laràteh (K.) — Clematis aristata
larímoe oerán'a (K.) — Ficus recurva
lasàm'a (K.) — Gleichenia linearis
latára (K.) — Faradaya splendida
limpoeróés'a (K.) — Macropsychanthus dolichobotrys

lingka oewing'a (cf. same name sub I) — Ficus flanata
lóémoe (K.) — Lycopodium cernuum
lóéngkang (K.) — Mussaenda aff. philippica
mamíntak'a (K.) — Parsonsia Cumingiana
mariwoeàn'a (Kb.), see bariwoeàn'a
naówi (K.) — Clematis aristata
óéwa (N.)
oewàk'a (P., S.) } — Flagellaria indica
oewàt'a (K.)
ondo (N.) — Ipomoea digitata
poeloetáng'a (K.) — Calamus spec. (n. 2937)
poendáneh (K.) — Vanieria cochinchinensis
poendángi (N.) — Hippocratea oblongifolia
„ (K.) — Gynochthodes spec. (n. 3332)
pòtòdára (K.) — Artabotrys macrantha
rimboàs'a (K.) — Piper sarmentosum
saràpat'a (K.) — Dioscorea oppositifolia
saráwat'oe wáwi (S.) — Smilax zeylanica
sároempaníran'a, see sub IV.
sasaríwoe (K.) — Adenia pandurata
sesònoh (M.) — Gymnema tingens
tabóéroe (K.) — Lophopyxis Maingayi
talimbá'as'a (K.) — Pericampylus glaucus, Stephania cauliflora
tatanároe waráwoh (K.) — Adenia pandurata

III. Epiphytes (Hemiparasites inclusive)

(am)baliáng'a (K.) — Cyclophorus adnascens
ára'ápa (M.) (cf. same name sub IV) — Asplenium adiantoides
araràn'a (K., P., S.) — Amyema celebica, Scurrula fusca
araràn'a késat'a (K.) — Amyema rigidiflora
baliáng'a (S.) — Lycopodium Phlegmaria
bóésa'oe palián (P.), see sub IV.
lóéngkoet'a — alle mosses
melángko (M.), see sub IV.
óéwak'oe piápi (P.) (cf. óéwak'a sub II) — Dendrobium lancifolium
tàbeng (M.) — Drynaria quercifolia
wáring garàtoe (K.) — Myrmecodia spec. (n. 2549)

IV. Herbs and Undershrubs.

abátoem'a (P.) — Echinochloa colonum
abóéroe (N.) — Polanisia icosandra
adóéroe (M.) — Cyperacea spec. (n. 3412), Desmodium gangeticum
àkeh (S.) — Imperata cylindrica Beauv., var. Koenigii Benth.
áloe'mpaliáng'a (K.) — Begonia spec. (ns. 2742, 2948, 2966)
áloe'mparánoh (K.) — Fatoua pilosa
ambóéroenga'mbàbi (K.) — Scoparia dulcis
ámi'mpiápi (P.) — Themeda gigantea
anàm'a (K., S.) — Amomum roseum
andaliaràn'a (K.) — Ipomoea Pes-caprae
anggaliára (N.) — Triumfetta procumbens
anóéwoe (M.) — Tacca leontopetaloides
ára'ápa (M.) (cf. same name sub III) — Nephrolepis biserrata
aráboe wówo'mbátoe (K.) — Pteris vittata
áring kámbing (K.) — Hyptis capitata
arompéna (M.) — Hemigraphis undulata
aróngan'a (S.) — Aracea spec. (n. 3116)
àteh (K.), see àkeh
aoelídi (M.) — Sorghum laxiflorum
babíseh (K.) — Elatostema polioneurum
bambádia (S.) — Helminthostachys zeylanica

bambaráwan'a (K.) — Aclisia sorzogonensis
bángoen'a (S.) — Polygonum minus
baráboet'a (K.) — Ischaemum muticum
bariwoeàn'a (K.) (cf. same name sub II) — Ipomoea gracilis
bawambánan'a (S.) — Donax canniformis
batàteh (K.) — Ipomoea Batatas Poir.
bengéla (K.) — Araceae spec. (n. 2991)
bèteh — Colocasia esculenta Schott
bíra — ? Colocasia esculenta Schott
boeràs'a (K.) — Saccharum spontaneum
bóésa('a) (St.) — Musa spec. (banana)
bóésa'oe palián (P.) — Dendrobium dimorphum
borontimóéka (K.) — Cyanotis axillaris
dandí'it (K.) — Abelmoschus moschatus, Bidens chinensis
daràteh (K.) — Physalis minima
daróénoe (M.), see natóénoe
dendí'i (M.) — Cenchrus Brownei
dendóéloeng (K.) — Riedelia curviflora
ganggóleh (K.) — Imperata cylindrica var. Koenigii, Sorghum propinquum
garòhom'a (K.) — Crinum asiaticum
láa'mbàbi (K.) — Jussieua angustifolia
lalóéga (Malay) — Cyrtosperma Merkusii
laróénoe (N.), see natóénoe
lelámpah (M.) — Brachiaria reptans
liléwan katowàn'a (K.) — Emilia sonchifolia
locmpánsit'a (K.) — Corchorus acutangulus
lóro (M.) — Abelmoschus Manihot
manisàn'a (K., Malay; manis = sweet; the fruits are tasting sweet) — Passiflora foetida
maransàm'a (K.) — Blumea balsamifera
marióéoe (P.) — Dianella coerulea
maróéloem'a (Kb.) — Fatoua pilosa
melángko (M.) — Polypodium phymatodes
móéra ararintak'a (K.) — Polypodium longissimum
nanàroh (K.) — Ischaemum polystachyum
nanàsak'a (S.) — Mapania spec. (ns. 2990, 3141)
nanàsi (N. Kar., St.) — Ananas comosus Merr.
„ (P.) — Gahnia aspera
nanioe (N.) — Spathoglottis plicata
nating'a (K., S., M.) — Abelmoschus Manihot
natóénoe (K.) — Wedelia biflora
nenàpoe (M.) — Oldenlandia biflora
óéta oe oedároh (K.) — Marasmius spec. (n. 2764)
óli'mpaliáng, see áloe'mpaliáng
omín'a (K.) (cf. same name sub I) — Ophiorrhiza spec. (1)
padóéoet oe papóéa (K.) — Oldenlandia pterita
paláni wawíra (K.) — Ilysanthes antipoda
pamparáwan'a (K.), see bambaráwan'a
pampóéloe (M.) — Euphorbia Atoto
pampoelóéta (K.) (cf. same name sub I) — Euphorbia serrulata
papárah (P.) — Cladium philippinense, Mariscus cyperinus
parangéna (S., St.) — Ananas comosus Merr.
paroewángi (M.) — Dryopteris Benoitiana
peòtah (K., S.) — Alpinia pectinata
pepántah (M.) — Mariscus pennatus
poeráha (K., M.) — Cyrtosperma Merkusii
pòhoh (K.) — Homalomena aromatica
radóéoet oe manároh (K.) — Ageratum conyzoides
randóéloeng, see dendóéloeng
róénti'i (M.) — Biophytum sensitivum
sa'ansáwa (K.), see sasáwa'a
saewóéa óétan (K.) — Hygrophila salicifolia

saibóéa (K.) — Stachytarpheta indica
sampadóéri (K.) — Commelina nodiflora, Floscopa scandens
sangkiróéman oe wáwi (K.) — Solanum torvum
saroempaníran'a (K., S.) — Dalbergia ferruginea
sasaráwi (K.) — Blumea lacera
sasáwa'a (K.) } — Calanthe spec. (n. 2989), Eulophia squalida, Spathoglottis
sasawá'an'a (S.) } plicata
sinosóan'a (K.) — Cyperacea spec. (n. 2513), Fimbristylis miliacea
tengtaramiseán wawíne, see sub I.
tentáiris (K.) — Alpinia pubiflora
tentajàsoe (K.) — Costus speciosus
tentàlas'a (K.) } — Aglaonema oblongifolium, Homalomena spec. (n. 3115)
tentàras'a (S.) }
tentarilómeh (M.) — Fimbristylis annua
tentárip'a (K., S., P., M.) — Scleria lithosperma, S. pubescens, Scleria scrobiculata
timàs'a (K.) — Rhaphidophora Korthalsii
toewoe (St.) — Saccharum officinarum L.

List of Morotai plant-names.

In Morotai an Alifuru language is spoken, belonging to the North Halmahera languages group. Of this language hardly any other data than the plantnames given below have come to my knowledge.

The only significance to which my attention was drawn is that of *Leptaspis urceolata*. The native name of this plant, or at any rate the name given to me was *bistiong kahomawogamaur*, which was said to signify: clinging to the hairs of the hand. Although this is probably a description rather than a current name, it is centainly very appropriate, since the inflorescences are covered by hook-shaped hairs and the spikelets get easily detached.

It may be added that *mabèka* and *manáver* mean female and male respectively. These words may, therefore, be compared with the Talaud words *wawíne* and *ésak'a*, which have been discussed on p. 131.

I. Trees and Shrubs.

abèteh — Mastersia Bakeri
atébeh — Homalium foetidum
atóboe — Pometia pinnata
banboerére — Conandrium spec. (n. 3505)
bemagiohíki — Dracontomelum dao
bòkoein — Gyronopsis Cumingiana
bólam — Anisoptera costata
dadátoko — Octomeles sumatrana
dédoro — Kleinhovia hospita
dodòfo — ?Olacacea spec. (n. 3571)
faai-faai — Annonacea spec. (n. 3496)
fitàko — Calophyllum soulattri
gibakolàno — Colona serratifolia
gohóra — Astronia ternatana
gòjen — Ficus Cassidyana
gomígo — Gronophyllum ?microcarpum
goséhi (Malay) — Nothaphoebe umbelliflora
háleh — Eugenia ?acutangula
hápo (Malay) — Canarium decumanum
harároko — Annonacea spec. (n. 3585), Polyalthia lateriflora
híleh — Castanopsis javanica

hobóéroe — Canarium decumanum
hòhòbòboh — Piper spec. (n. 3619)
hokaróéboe — Jagera serrata
hóro — Celtis latifolia
íroe — Vatica papuana
kitòjer — Macaranga hispida
kòbo-kòbo — Polyscias nodosa
kóéhoe-kóéhoe — Oldenlandia spec. (n. 3636)
koelèman — Horsfieldia Roxburghii
kohàka — Psychotria spec. (3)
kokarèboko — Ficus spec. (n. 3573)
kòko — Gironniera celtidifolia
kokoemóétoe — Horsfieldia sylvestris
korehára — Euphorbiacea spec. (n. 3595)
kotomóétoe, see kokomóétoe
ladatáit — Claoxylon longifolium
lían — Canarium lian
lían daoen lèbar — Haplolobus moluccanus
libériën — Pipturus velutinus
ligòjer — Manilkara Merrilliana
litòko — Buchanania amboinensis, Planchonella Vrieseana
lóéka-lóékam — Aglaia argentea
lowóra — Intsia bijuga
máko-mákor — Eugenia claviflora
máleh-máleh — Elaeocarpus Ganitrus
matóa (Malay) — Pometia pinnata
méata — Garcinia spec. (ns. 3603, 3679)
médeh-médeh — Canarium hirsutum
mòdor — Gomphandra australiana
móétingóéti — Osmelia philippina
momóana — Apocynacea (?Tabernaemontana) spec. (ns. 3658, 3676)
neríhaka — Canarium asperum
ngámin — Dracontomelum dao
ngetéda — Leea indica
ngodóro — Grewia ceramensis
níar — Canarium commune
nòoeng — Parastemon urophyllus
oehéli — Nothaphoebe umbelliflora
otéomawále — Planchonella firma
pangáha — Barringtonia acuminata
péa-péa — Endospermum formicarum
poelohári, poelosári — Lepiniopsis ternatensis
rába — Ficus spec. (n. 3541)
rédi — Cerbera manghas
roekíti — Gnetum gnemon
salawàkoe (Malay) — Octomeles sumatrana
sáleh, see háleh
tatáoen — Laportea amplissima
tehíriki — Palaquium Lobbianum
tioa — Allophylus Cobbe
tòlom — Boerlageodendron spec. (n. 3514)
tómi-tómi — Eugenia formosa

II. Lianas and Climbers.

abéteh — Uncaria pedicellata
dongòta — Conocephalus suaveolens
hohiníngа — Uncaria setiloba
róma — Flagellaria indica
ròtoe-ròtoe — Gynostemma pedatum
táli — Piper amboinense

toké — Calamus spec. (n. 3527)
torò̀hoekoe — Momordica cochinchinensis

III. Epiphytes.

bóékoh-bóékoh — Hydnophytum ?philippinense, H. spec. (n. 3602), Myrmecodia spec. (n. 3663)
hahai — Lycopodium pinifolium
lolomíti — Podochilus Lamii
totoehóéhoen(g) — Asplenium nidus
wéka-wéka — Drynaria rigidula

IV. Herbs and Undershrubs.

biáwa — Donax canniformis
bistiong kahomawogamaur — Leptaspis urceolata
djéla-djéla — Centotheca latifolia, Microstegium fasciculatum
goeabébeh — Impatiens spec. (n. 3575)
golióa — Marantacea spec. (n. 3465)
héhéwéheh — Cyperacea spec. (n. 3606), Mapania spec. (n. 3661)
héhéwéheh mabèka — Mapania spec. (n. 3546)
„ manáver — Mapania spec. (n. 3479)
kakáno — Sorghum propinquum
karahègóémi — Dryopteris invisa
kèkètokoe — Selaginella asperulipes, S. cupressoides
kèkètokoe mabèka — Selaginella Gaudichaudiana
„ manáver — Selaginella caudata
momoróétoe — Coix Lacryma-Jobi
óéga-óéga — Costus speciosus
pòpóko — Cureuligo capitulata
róma — Plocoglottis spec. (n. 3558)

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS.

Although the publication of this paper, partly on account of the nature of this sort of work, is considerably delayed, I wish to tender my best thanks to alle those corporations, government officials and private botanists, who have in some way contributed either to the expedition or to the publication of its results. Whereas the Indian Committee for Scientific Research (Indisch Comité voor Wetenschappelijke Onderzoekingen) granted a considerable sum, the Neth.-Indian Government paid the bulk of the expenses, mostly in the form of transportation and of the assistance by officials and coolies. First of all, my thanks are due to Dr W. M. Docters van Leeuwen, then director of the Government Botanic Gardens at Buitenzorg, to Dr J. G. B. Beumée, then Chief of the Herbarium and to Dr K. W. Dammerman, then Chief of the Zoological museum, of that institution, for their initiative and their generous help. Furthermore I am greatly indebted to Mr H. J. Schmidt, then Resident Magistrate of Manado for his kind interest in my work and particularly to Mr Eckenhausen, the then Civil Service officer at Beo, Karakelong, who not only helped me in every way in his power, but offered me a lavish hospitality in his house. In addition, I wish to thank those numerous individuals who helped me in many ways, whose names would form a list too long to publish here. Finally, my thanks are due to Dr J. H. F. Umbgrove, professor of Geology at Delft, for critically reading § 3 (General Part), and furthermore to those who kindly elaborated a part of my collection and whose names are enumerated in the Systematic Part.

I will not conclude these lines without having paid a warm tribute to the memory of my native Sundanese friend and assistant Iboet, whose modesty, zeal and devotion I will never forget. In his kind-heartedness he was entirely free from that arrogant would-be superiority which some of the semi-educated natives from Java deem well to show off in the presence of less-educated Malaysian peoples. In many of those inevitable quarrels with unwilling or too exacting coolies which seem to be inherent to every starting expedition, his tactful demeanour would settle matters in a short time and to everybody's contentment. After such a success Iboet became silent again and simply resumed his never-ending task. A few years after our return at Buitenzorg he quietly passed away, still a young man, of consumption.

Literature to the General Part.

BARETTA, J. M., Halmahera and Morotai. Meded. Encyclop. Bur. 13, 1917; with extensive bibliography.

BOEREMA, J., Typen van den regenval in Nederlandsch-Indië (Rainfall types in the Netherlands Indies) — Verh. 18, Kon. Magn. en Meteor. Obs., Batavia, without year.

——, Regenval in Nederlandsch-Indië (Rainfall in the Netherlands Indies) — Verh. 24, Kon. Magn. en Meteor. Obs., Batavia, I, 1931.

EBBINGE WUBBEN, F. A., Die Nanusa-Inseln — Peterm. Geogr. Mitth. 5, 1888, 136.

——, Naar de Talaut-eilanden — Tijdschr. Kon. Ned. Aardr. Gen., Ser. II, 6, 1889, 201—217.

HERINGA, P. K., Rapport over de begroeiing van de Sangi- en Talaud-eilanden — Tectona 14, 1921, 733—746.

HICKSON, S. J., A Naturalist in North Celebes. A narrative of travels in Minahassa, the Sangir and Talaut Islands, with notices of the fauna, flora and ethnology of the districts visited. London, 1889, 37—55, 173—204.

KUENEN, PH. H. in PH. H. KUENEN, J. H. F. UMBGROVE and F. A. VENING MEINESZ, Gravity, geology and morphology of the East Indian Archipelago — Publ. Neth. Geodetic Comm. (Gravity Exped. at sea, 1923—1932, II), without year, p. 187. Cf. also Tijdschr. Kon. Ned. Aardr. Gen. Ser. II, 47, 1930, 997 and 1004.

LAM, H. J., Een plantengeografisch Dorado — Handel. Vierde Ned.-Ind. Natuurwet. Congr. 1926 (1927), 386—397.

——, Miangas (Palmas). Ind. Com. voor Wetensch. Onderz. 6, 1932, 66 pp., 20 figs., 3 maps and bibliography.

——, Studies in Phylogeny II — Blumea 3, 1938, 142—151.

MERRILL, E. D., Enumeration of Philippine Flowering Plants 4, 1926, 77—154.

RIEL, P. M. VAN, The Snellius-Expedition, Vol. II, Part 2, Chapt. II. The bottom configuration in relation to the flow of the bottom water, 1934, Pl. II, Bathymetrical Chart of the East-Indian Archipelago (same map in KUENEN, l.c.).

ROOTHAAN, H. PH., Geologische en Petrografische schets der Talaud- en Nanoesa-eilanden (Noordoost-Celebes) — Jaarb. Mijnwezen Ned. Ind. 54 (1926), Verhandel. 2, 1928, 47 pp. with map (Pl. VIII).

STELLER, R. G. F., Nadere bijdrage tot de kennis van het Talaoetsch — Verhand. Batav. Gen. v. K. & W. 59, part 4, 1914, 1—113, I—III.

TALENS, J. P., Een en ander over het Talaoetsch. Medegedeeld door N. Adriani — Verhand. Batav. Gen. v. K. & W. 59, part 1, 1911, 1—118.

TERGAST, G. C. W. C., Schets van den Landbouw op de Sangihe- en Talaud-eilanden — Landbouw 11, 1935—1936, 125—145; with short summary in English.

SYSTEMATIC PART.

(L. B. HOLTHUIS)

1. INTRODUCTION.

When the Pteridophytes and the Spermatophytes of Lam's Talaud and Morotai collection of 1926 were recently taken at hand, they had already been partly identified. Certain families which have been mentioned in the following papers, had been treated by specialists; the numbers in brackets indicate the pages on which the quotations in question may be found.

BAKHUIZEN VAN DEN BRINK, R. C., Revisio *Ebenacearum* Malayensium (158, 224, 270) — Bull. Jard. Bot. Buitenzorg, Sér. III, 15, 1936—1938, 1.

BENL, G., Die Systematik der Gattung *Gahnia* Forst. (178) — Bot. Archiv. 1940, 151.

DANSER, B. H., Die *Polygonaceen* Niederländisch-Ostindiens (180) — Bull. Jard. Bot. Buitenzorg, Sér. III, Vol. 8, 1927, p. 117.

——, The *Loranthaceae* of the Netherlands Indies (249, 329, 344, 365, 437, 450) — Bull. Jard. Bot. Buitenzorg, Sér. III, 11, 1931, 233.

KOSTER, JOSÉPHINE TH., The *Compositae* of the Malay Archipelago. I. Vernonieae and Eupatorieae (411, 419, 473, 489) — Blumea 1, 1935, 351.

LAM, H. J., Further Studies on Malayan *Sapotaceae* I (395, 398, 400, 411, 412, 467, 471, 472, 473, 474, 476, 481) — Bull. Jard. Bot. Buitenzorg, Sér. III, 8, 1927, 381.

——, The *Burseraceae* of the Malay Archipelago and Peninsula (329, 408, 437, 440, 464, 471, 487, 513) — Bull. Jard. Bot. Buitenzorg, Sér. III, 12, 1932, 281.

——, Note on the *Sapotaceae-Mimusopoideae* in general and on the far-eastern Manilkara-allies in particular (355) — Blumea 4, 1941, 323.

MARKGRAF, F., Monographie der Gattung *Gnetum* (438, 443, 478) — Bull. Jard. Bot. Buitenzorg, Sér. III, 10, 1930, 407.

OOSTSTROOM, S. J. VAN, The *Convolvulaceae* of Malaysia III (502, 518, 531, 536, 561) — Blumea 3, 1940, 481.

SCHRÖTER, HILDE & WINKLER, H., Monographie der Gattung *Elatostema* s. l. (107, 108) — Fedde Repert. Spec. Nov. Regn. Veget., Beih. 83, 1935, 1.

SLOOTEN, D. F. VAN, The *Dipterocarpaceae* of the Dutch East Indies II (11) — Bull. Jard. Bot. Buitenzorg, Sér. III, 8, 1927, 1.

——, The *Dipterocarpaceae* of the Dutch East Indies IV (117) — Bull. Jard. Bot. Buitenzorg, Sér. III, 9, 1927, 67.

SMITH, J. J., On a collection of *Orchidaceae* from the Northern Moluccas — Bull. Jard. Bot. Buitenzorg, Sér. III, 11, 1931, 67.

STEENIS, C. G. G. J. VAN, The *Bignoniaceae* of the Netherlands Indies (230) — Bull. Jard. Bot. Buitenzorg, Sér. III, 10, 1928, 173.

Other parts of the collection had been definitely (*) or provisorily identified without having been previously published. As far as could be ascertained, the following botanists, some of them at our request, have made identifications in all or some specimens belonging to the groups mentioned behind their names:

A. H. G. ALSTON: *Selaginellaceae**.

R. C. BAKHUIZEN VAN DEN BRINK Jr.: *Melastomataceae**.

J. G. B. BEUMÉE: *Lygodium, Taccaceae, Urticaceae, Magnoliaceae, Hernandiaceae, Pittosporaceae, Euphorbiaceae* (except *Antidesma*), *Tiliaceae, Sterculiaceae* (except *Pterospermum* and *Sterculia*), *Osbornia, Onagraceae, Rapanea, Loganiaceae, Apocynaceae, Boraginaceae.*

C. E. B. BREMEKAMP: *Acanthaceae**, *Rubiaceae**.

J. TH. HENRARD: *Gramineae**.
JOSÉPHINE TH. KOSTER: *Compositae**.
H. J. LAM: *Parkia, Antidesma, Sapindaceae, Gymnema, Verbenaceae** (with A. D. J. MEEUSE).
B. J. D. MEEUSE: *Intsia, Uraria, Pongamia, Inocarpus, Mucuna, Pueraria, Goodeniaceae.*
S. J. VAN OOSTSTROOM: *Convolvulaceae**.
O. POSTHUMUS: *Pteridophyta** (except *Selaginellaceae* and *Lygodium borneense*).
D. F. VAN SLOOTEN: *Flacourtiaceae*, Combretaceae**.
J. WASSCHER: *Taxaceae**.

These identifications were, as far as necessary and possible, checked by me; the remaining specimens were all identified by me, except those retained at Buitenzorg, viz. the *Cyperaceae, Polygalaceae, Euphorbia* and the *Rhizophoraceae,* which were earlier checked there.

In the following list only those specimens have been mentioned, whose identification is practically certain. Yet, there are two categories; those identifications which are made by monographers or which for some other reason may be considered "final", are printed in normal roman type. To these a number of provisional identifications have been added in small print. They may be regarded reasonably and many of them even quite trustworthy. Their purpose is to provide the reader with a less incomplete survey of the flora of these islands. They have been dealt with in a somewhat more concise way.

Of the "final" identifications it may be said that, in case they have been quoted in previously published papers, these papers have been mentioned in addition to the first publication of the species; the latter has been cited for all species enumerated.

Geographical names have been given in the official orthography, recommended in the "Lijst van de voornaamste aardrijkskundige namen in den Nederlandsch-Indischen Archipel 1923" (Ed. 2). The following abbreviations have been used: Bz. = Herbarium of the Government Botanic Garden, Buitenzorg, Java; L. = National Herbarium (Rijksherbarium), Leiden; U. = Herbarium of the University, Utrecht; d. = dark; flow. = flowers; fr. = fruits; G. = Goenoeng (Gunong) = mountain; infl. = inflorescences; K. = Koeala (Kuala) = river; lvs. = leaves; l. = light; nat. n. = native name; N. = Noesa (Nusa) = island; P. = Poelau (Pulau) = island; sec. = secondary (forest).

Ladang = dry paddy field, in general, any field for cultivation; alang-alang = grass-vegetation (mainly *Imperata cylindrica*).

For the pronunciation of the native names, see General Part, § 7. Those native names, which, in some way, have been discussed in that paragraph are, in the Systematic Part, denoted by an * asterisk.

The localities have always been quoted by their number (e. g.: Loc. 4) as mentioned under Fig. 1, occasionally augmented by additional details.

The list contains only the Pteridophyta and the Spermatophyta. The Algae (1), Fungi and Lichenes (109) and Mosses (9), in total 119 numbers, as well as all specimens collected in the Minahasa (North Celebes) and Tidore (Moluccas) during the same trip, have been ignored.

The term Malaysia is used in accordance with Van Steenis's proposal (Gardens' Bull. Str. Settl. IX, 2, 1937, 188), including the Malay Peninsula, the Philippines and New Guinea.

The sequence of the families is those given in De Dalla Torre & Harms's Genera Siphonogamarum (1900—1907). Genera and species have been alphabetically arranged.

2. LIST OF UNIDENTIFIED SPECIMENS.

In order to provide the user with a complete survey of the collection, the following list gives an enumeration of the Pteridophytes (5) and Phanerogams (183), we were not able to identify. Some of these were retained at Buitenzorg and were, therefore, not available, others were too incomplete to allow an identification, but the greater part belong to critical genera in which the judgment of a specialist is required. It is probable that this category contains a number of new species or even genera. The order is alphabetical throughout (T. Talaud; M. Morotai).

Acanthaceae, T.: Pseuderanthemum (n. 3437); indet. (n. 2688, Staurogyne?).
Alangiaceae, T.: Alangium (n. 2854).
Annonaceae, T.: Mezzettia (n. 2898); indet. (n. 2582) — M.: indet. (ns. 3496, 3585).
Apocynaceae, M.: Tabernaemontana (ns. 3658, 3676).
Araceae, T.: Epipremnopsis (ns. 2734, 3143); Homalomena (n. 3115); indet. (ns. 2625, 2991, 3116) — M.: indet. (n. 3592).
Araliaceae, M.: Boerlageodendron (n. 3514).
Asclepiadaceae, T.: Dischidia (n. 3017); Tylophora (n. 2892).
Balsaminaceae, M.: Impatiens (n. 3575).
Begoniaceae, T.: Begonia (ns. 2742, 2948, 2966, 2967) — M.: Begonia (n. 3605).
Burmanniaceae, T.: Gymnosiphon (n. 2817).
Ceratophyllaceae, T.: Ceratophyllum (n. 3229).
Combretaceae, T.: Terminalia (ns. 2824, 2884, 3167, 3370).
Connaraceae, T.: Connarus (n. 3005) — M.: Santaloides (ns. 3458, 3569).
Cyperaceae, T.: Cladium (n. 3249); Cyperus (ns. 2513, 3412); Fimbristylis (n. 3026); Hypolytrum (n. 3069); Mapania (ns. 2749, 3141, 3330); indet. (ns. 2757, 2990, 3318) — M.: Mapania (ns. 3479, 3546, 3661); indet. (n. 3606).
Dilleniaceae, T.: Dillenia (n. 3072); Saurauia (ns. 2638, 2754, 2883).
Elaeocarpaceae, T.: Elaeocarpus (n. 3120).
Euphorbiaceae, T.: Antidesma (n. 2785); Baccaurea (n. 2657); Endospermum (ns. 2728, 2873); Macaranga (ns. 2859, 2894); indet. (n. 3321) — M.: indet. (ns. 3590, 3595, 3654).
Flacourtiaceae, M.: Flacourtia (n. 3568).
Gonystylaceae, T.: Gonystylus (ns. 2856, 2906).
Guttiferae, M.: Garcinia (ns. 3603, 3679).
Lauraceae, T.: Cinnamomum (n. 2903); Litsea (n. 3314) — M.: indet. (n. 3511).
Leguminosae, T.: Millettia (n. 3123, 3164).
Lemnaceae, T.: Lemna (n. 3231); Wolffia (ns. 3163, 3230).
Liliaceae, T.: Pleomele (n. 3075).
Loganiaceae, T.: Strychnos (n. 3333).
Marantaceae, M.: indet. (ns. 3465, 3598).

Meliaceae, T.: Aglaia (n. 3322); Chisocheton (n. 3204) — M.: Aglaia (ns. 3506, 3596).
Moraceae, T.: Ficus (ns. 2535, 2721, 3125, 3168, 3427, 3452) — M.: Ficus (ns. 3541, 3573).
Myrsinaceae, M.: Conandrium (n. 3515).
Myrtaceae, T.: Decaspermum (n. 3278); Eugenia (ns. 2623, 2632, 2665, 2886, 2940, 2986, 3098, 3442) — M.: (n. 3460).
Najadaceae, T.: Najas (n. 3232).
Olacaceae?, M.: indet. (n. 3571).
Orchidaceae, T.: Bulbophyllum (n. 3243); Calanthe (n. 2989); Corymborchis (n. 3064); Dendrobium (n. 3171); Tropidia (n. 3001); indet. (ns. 2804, 2805) — M.: Bulbophyllum (ns. 3494, 3523); Ceratostylis (n. 3554); Eria (n. 3549); Plocoglottis (n. 3558); Robiquetia (n. 3483); Taeniophyllum (n. 3482); indet. (ns. 3480, 3521, 3675).
Palmae, T.: Calamus (ns. 2936, 2937); indet. (n. 2916) — M.: Calamus (n. 3527).
Pandanaceae, T.: Freycinetia (n. 2891); Pandanus (n. 2992).
Piperaceae, T.: Piper (n. 2681) — M.: Piper (n. 3619).
Polypodiaceae, T.: Dryopteris (n. 2788) — M.: Dryopteris (ns. 3517, 3643).
Proteaceae, T.: Helicia (n. 3297).
Rubiaceae, T.: Amaracarpus (n. 2813); Argostemma (n. 2890); Canthium (ns. 3293, 3310); Dolicholobium (n. 2812); Gynochthodes (ns. 3137, 3332); Morinda (n. 3270); Myrmecodia (ns. 2549, 3020, 3304, 3324); Ophiorrhiza (n. 3079); Plectronia (n. 3294); Psychotria (ns. 3252, 3306); Uncaria (n. 2621); Xanthophytum (n. 2696); indet. (n. 2612; Bikkia?) — M.: Amaracarpus (n. 3513); ? Guettarda (n. 3542); Myrmecodia (n. 3663); Myrmephytum (n. 3602); Oldenlandia (n. 3636); Ophiorrhiza (ns. 3488, 3591, 3659); Psychotria (ns. 3474, 3512, 3535).
Sapindaceae, T.: Pometia (n. 2982).
Selaginellaceae, T.: Selaginella (ns. 3240, 3403).
Symplocaceae, T.: Symplocos (n. 3097).
Triuridaceae, T.: Sciaphila (ns. 2865, 3107).
Urticaceae, T.: Elatostema (ns. 2717, 2735, 2778, 2809, 3213); Laportea (n. 3007) — M.: Elatostema (ns. 3520, 3633).
Vitaceae, T.: Cissus (n. 2484); indet. (n. 2921) — M.: indet. (n. 3589).
Zingiberaceae, M.: indet. (n. 3559).

3. ENDEMIC SPECIES.

T a l a u d — Argostemma spec., Artabotrys macrantha, Canthium spec., Dendrobium dimorphum, D. talaudense, Discocalyx silvestris, Dolicholobium spec., Gymnacranthera Ibutii, Gynochthodes spec., Hemigraphis undulata, Ixora talaudensis, Jasminum suberosum, Macropsychanthus dolichobotrys, Microstylis purpureo-viridis, M. talaudensis, Morinda spec., Myrmecodia spec. (1), Psychotria spec. (1), Uncaria spec.

M o r o t a i — Dicymanthes hexameres, Dryopteris spec. (2), Memecylon protrusum, Myrmecodia spec. (2), Myrmephytum spec., Ophiorrhiza spec. (2), Podochilus Lamii, Psychotria spec. (2), P. spec. (3).

4. NEW GENERA, SPECIES, VARIETIES AND COMBINATIONS, PUBLISHED IN THIS PAPER.

Artabotrys macrantha Holth., Astronia ternatana Bakh. f., Desmofischera Holth., D. monosperma Holth., Discocalyx silvestris Holth., Gymnacranthera Ibutii Holth., Hemigraphis ceramensis Brem., H. Rumphii Brem. with var. angustifolia Brem., var. gracilis Brem. and var. pubescens Brem., H. undulata Brem., Hydnophytum inerme (Gaud.) Brem., Jasminum suberosum Holth., Lachnostoma apoda (Val.) Brem., Macropsychanthus dolichobotrys Holth., Memecylon protrusum Bakh. f., Nauclea mitragyna (Miq.) Brem.

6. ENUMERATION OF THE SPECIES.

PTERIDOPHYTA.

LYCOPODIACEAE (O. Posthumus)

Lycopodium cernuum L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 1103.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, alang-alang field, alt. 5 m, April 28: *n. 2679* — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, clearing in forest, alt. 350 m, June 2: *n. 3308* (more or less climbing, bright green, sporangiophores l. yellowish brown; nat. n.: *lóémoe*) — Nenoesa, Loc. 10, Merampi, G. Maranggi, alang-alang field on sandstone, alt. 170 m, June 13: *n. 3422* (plant. l. green, sporangiophores l. brown).

Distribution: pantropic.

Lycopodium Phlegmaria L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 1101.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 50 m, May 4: *n. 2827* (epiphytic, pendulous, lvs. bright green, stem l. brown, sporangiophores l. green) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 25: *n. 3170* (same annotations as n. 2827; nat. n.: *baliáng'a)*.

Distribution: paleotropic.

Lycopodium pinifolium Bl., Enum., 1828, 264.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 50 m, June 20: *n. 3461* (epiphytic, pendulous, lvs. d. green, stem brownish green, sporangiophores green, sporangia yellow; nat. n. *hahai*).

Distribution: Malaysia and New Caledonia.

SELAGINELLACEAE (A. H. G. Alston)

Selaginella asperulipes v. A. v. R., Mal. Ferns & Allies, suppl. 1, 1917, corr. p. 70.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 250 m, June 25: *n. 3608* (terrestrial, stem l. green, lvs. bright green above, l. green below, sporangiophores dull l. green; nat. n.: *kèkètokoe*).

Distribution: Moluccas (Halmahera, Morotai, Ternate, Obi).

Selaginella caudata (Desv.) Spring, Mon. 2, 1849, 139.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 40 m, June 20: *n. 3477* (entire plant l. green, paler at base, stem dirty green; nat. n.: *kèkètokoe* **manáver*).

Distribution: Java, Moluccas (Morotai, Ternate, Ceram, Ambon, Aroe Islands) and New Guinea.

Selaginella cupressina (Willd.) Spring, Bot. Zeit. 1, 1838, 211.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 150 m, April 30: *n. 2686* (terrestrial, stem green, lvs. l. green, sporangiophores l. green, pale brown with age).

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 160 m, June 23: *n. 3572* (same annotations as n. 2686, but sporangiophores d. green; nat. n.: *kèkètokoe*).

Distribution: Java?, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas (Morotai, Tidore, Ternate, Ceram, Ambon).

Selaginella Gaudichaudiana Spring, Mon. 2, 1849, 149.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 40 m, June 20: *n. 3478* (terrestrial, lvs. bright green above, l. green below, stem dirty green at base, adult sporangiophores yellow; nat. n.: *kèkètokoe* **mabèka*).

Distribution: Moluccas (Morotai, Ceram), New Guinea.

Selaginella involvens (Sw.) Hieron., Hedwigia 50, 1911, 2.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 2: *n. 2761* (terrestrial, l. green, stem lighter).

Distribution: tropical Asia to New Guinea.

OPHIOGLOSSACEAE (O. Posthumus)

Helminthostachys zeylanica (L.) Hook., Gen., 1842, t. 47A.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, north of G. Ajambana, swampy place in sec. forest, alt. 260 m, May 22: *n. 3117* (terrestrial, stem dirty green, lvs. bright green, sporangia green; nat. n.: *bambádi'a*).

Distribution: tropical Asia to the Carolines, New Guinea, Australia and New Caledonia.

Ophioglossum pendulum L., Sp. Pl., ed. 2, 1763, 1518.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 150 m, May 7: *n. 2889* (epiphytic, pendulous, entire plant bright green).

Distribution: tropical Asia to Polynesia.

ANGIOPTERIDACEAE (O. Posthumus)

Angiopteris evecta (Forst. f.) Hoffm., Comm. Soc. Reg. Gött. 12, 1796, 29, t. 5.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, bank of rivulet, alt. 50 m, May 3: *n. 2790* (terrestrial, lvs. l. green, lighter below, 3.10 m long, stipules dull d. brown, sporangia l. brown).

Distribution: paleotropic.

SCHIZAEACEAE (O. Posthumus, except *Lygodium borneense*).

Lygodium borneense v. A. v. R., Bull. Jard. Bot. Buitenzorg, Sér. II, Nr. 20, 1915, 29.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 60 m, April 24: *n. 2554* (lvs. green, sporangia brownish green).

Distribution: Borneo, Talaud.

Lygodium circinnatum (Burm.) Sw., Syn., 1806, 153.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 5 m, April 23: *n. 2511*

(climbing, lvs. bright green, sporophylls d. green; nat. n.: *gintoh*) — Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, sec. forest, May 26: *n. 3199* (lvs. d. green, slightly paler below, sporophylls darker, petioles and stems l. green, slightly brown).

Distribution: tropical Asia to Micronesia and N. Australia.

Lygodium scandens (L.) Sw., Schrad. Journ. 1800[2], 1801, 106.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, alang-alang field, alt. 100 m, April 25: *n. 2598* (lvs. and sporangia l. green, stems l. brown).

Distribution: tropical Asia to Australia.

Schizaea dichotoma (L.) Sm., Mém. Ac. Turin 5, 1793, 422, t. 9, fig. 9.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, east of Beo, cleared forest in ravine, alt. 30 m, April 25: *n. 2568* (lvs. green, sporangia l. brown) — Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 2: *n. 2758* (lvs. l. green, sporangia d. brown); May 8: *n. 2914* (lvs. l. green, sporangia l. green, brown with age) — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, under shrubs, alt. 400 m, May 31: *n. 3236* (lvs. green, stems green to reddish brown, slightly violet, sporangia bright brown).

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 50 m, June 20: *n. 3484* (lvs. green, stem greenish brown below, sporangia green, brown with age).

Distribution: Madagascar, tropical Asia to Polynesia.

Schizaea digitata (L.) Sw., Syn., 1806, 150, 380, t. 4, fig. 1.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, cleared old forest, alt. 120 m, April 27: *n. 2667* (terrestrial, lvs. d. green, sporangia l. green, brown with age); Pasir Malap, east of Lobo, old forest, alt. 50 m, May 13: *n. 2997* (same annotations as n. 2667).

Distribution: tropical Asia and Polynesia.

GLEICHENIACEAE (O. Posthumus)

Gleichenia linearis (Burm.) Clarke, Trans. Linn. Soc. Bot. 1, 1880, 428.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. vegetation along wayside, alt. 120 m, April 27: *n. 2658* (lvs. bright green, stems l. green, brown at base, forming dense masses, sporangia l. green; nat. n.: *lasàm'a*) — Nenoesa, Loc. 10, Merampi, G. Maranggi, open sandstone plateau, between alang-alang, alt. 170 m, June 13: *n. 3421* (creeping, lvs. bright green, stems and petioles l. brown, sporangia very l. brown).

Distribution: pantropic.

HYMENOPHYLLACEAE (O. Posthumus)

Trichomanes cupressoides Desv., Prodr., 1827, 330.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 100 m, May 2: *n. 2752* (terrestrial, lvs. d. green, petioles black, indusium d. green).

Distribution: tropical Africa and Asia to New Guinea.

Trichomanes humile Forst. f., Prodr., 1786, 84.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, bank of K. Bahewa, on rocks, alt. 30 m, May 12: *n. 2969* (entire plant d. green).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula and Formosa to Polynesia.

Trichomanes millefolium Presl, Hym., 1843, 16, 43.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, on rock, alt. 80 m, May 4: *n. 2834* (lvs. d. green, petioles d. brown, indusium brown).

Distribution: Malaysia to Australia and Polynesia.

Trichomanes rhomboideum Sm., Journ. Bot. 3, 1841, 417.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 50 m, June 21: *n. 3525* (lvs. d. green, indusium d. green, sporangia d. brown).

Distribution: Java, Celebes, Philippines, Moluccas.

Trichomanes sumatranum v. A. v. R., Bull. Dépt. Agric. Ind. Néerl. 18, 1908, 4.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 80 m, May 2: *n. 2751* (lvs. d. green, petioles and roots black, indusium brown).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Talaud. Closely related species occur in eastern Malaysia.

CYATHEACEAE (O. Posthumus)

Alsophila Fenicis (Cop.) C. Chr., Ind., suppl., 1913, 5.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open forest, ravine, alt. 320 m, June 2: *n. 3319* (fern tree, 4 m high, trunk 3 m high, black, lvs. d. green above, paler below, sporangia coffee-brown, ramenta d. brown, petioles green above, d. brown and shining below; nat. n.: *atomòning'a*).

Distribution: Batan Islands (northern Philippines), Talaud, Tidore.

Alsophila glauca (Bl.) Sm., Journ. Bot., 3, 1841, 419.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 100 m, April 30: *n. 2703* (fern tree, about 13 m high, lvs. bright green above, l. green below, sporangia d. brown, petioles d. green); steep bank of K. Tatamboewe, alt. 50 m, May 3: *n. 2791* (same annotations as n. 2703; nat. n.: *lála ejàn'a*).

Distribution: tropical Asia to New Guinea.

POLYPODIACEAE (O. Posthumus)

Acrostichum aureum L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 1069.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, south of Beo, mangrove, alt. 2 m, April 23: *n. 2516* (sporophylls brown).

Distribution: pantropic.

Adiantum flabellulatum L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 1095.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, under grass, alt. 350 m, May 31: *n. 3255* (terrestrial, lvs. d. green, petioles black, sporangia d. brown).

Distribution: China, Indo-China and Malay Peninsula to Japan, Philippines, Moluccas and Lesser Sunda Islands.

Antrophyum callifolium Bl., Enum., 1828, 111.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest on riverbank, alt. 50 m, May 1: *n. 2705* (epiphytic, lvs. l. green, sporangia d. green); old forest, alt. 50 m, May 4: *n. 2830* (epiphytic, lvs. coriaceous, d. green, sporangia brown).

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 60 m, June 20: *n. 3487* (same annotations as n. 2830); Marilako, old forest, alt. 20 m, June 29: *n. 3670*

(epiphytic, lvs. not coriaceous, d. green above, l. green below, sporangia d. brown).

Distribution: Madagascar to Polynesia.

Aspidium decurrens Presl, Rel. Haenk. 1, 1825, 28.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Goegoeti, G. Ligòjer, old forest on limestone, bank of rivulet, alt. 60 m, June 24: *n. 3600* (terrestrial, lvs. d. green above, paler below, nerves and petioles d. violet brown, sporangia d. brown).

Distribution: S.E. Asia to Polynesia.

Aspidium Leuzeanum (Gaud.) O. Ktze, Bot. Zeit., 1846, 474.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, bank of rivulet, alt. 220 m, May 22: *n. 3111* (terrestrial, lvs. bright green, petioles bright reddish brown, greenish towards apex, sporangia brown, ramenta brown).

Distribution: India and S. China to Australia and Polynesia.

Aspidium pentaphyllum v. A. v. R., Bull. Dépt. Agric. Ind. Néerl. 18, 1908, 16.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 280 m, May 23: *n. 3142* (terrestrial, lvs. dull green, paler below, nerves d. greenish brown, sporangia bright brown, petioles shining d. brown).

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 100 m, June 21: *n. 3518* (same annotations as n. 3142).

Distribution: Talaud, Morotai, New Guinea.

Aspidium polymorphum Wall., Cat., 1828, n. 382.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest on riverbank, alt. 50 m, April 30: *n. 2701* (stout terrestrial, lvs. l. green, petioles brownish green, sporangia l. brown).

Distribution: India, Birma, Malay Peninsula, Java, Lesser Sunda Islands.

Asplenium adiantoides (L.) C. Chr., Ind., 1905, 99.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 50 m, May 4: *n. 2828* (epiphytic, lvs. bright green above, l. green below, petioles brown at base, green near apex, sporangia brown); old forest, alt. 250 m, May 8: *n. 2911* (same annotations as n. 2828); old forest, alt. 150 m, May 11: *n. 2954* (same annotations as n. 2828) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 260 m, May 23: *n. 3144* (lvs. very l. green, petioles shining black, sporangia l. brown) — Miangas, Loc. 9, G. Batoe, on rock, alt. 80 m, June 11: *n. 3383* (same annotations as n. 2828; nat. n.: **ára'ápa*).

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 50 m, June 20: *n. 3485* (same annotations as n. 2828).

Distribution: paleotropic.

Asplenium nidus L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 1079.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 50 m, May 1: *n. 2732* (epiphytic, lvs. shining d. green above, paler below, midrib brown, sporangia l. brown).

Morotai, Loc. 12, alt. 100 m, June 22: *n. 3548* (epiphytic, lvs. bright green, midrib and petioles d. green, sporangia d. brown; nat. n.: *tòtoehóéhoen*); Goegoeti, G. Ligòjer, old forest on limestone, alt. 60 m, June 24: *n. 3601* (same annotations and nat. n. as n. 3548).

Distribution: paleotropic.

Asplenium scandens Sm., Journ. Bot. 3, 1841, 408.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 80 m, May 4: *n. 2835* (climbing, lvs. d. green, petioles darker, indusia very l. green).

Distribution: Borneo, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea, Micronesia, Polynesia.

Asplenium scolopendrioides Sm., Journ. Bot. 3, 1841, 408.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 50 m, June 20: *n. 3468* (epiphytic, lvs. d. green above, paler below, sporangia d. brown).

Distribution: Borneo, Philippines, Moluccas, New Guinea.

Asplenium tenerum Forst. f., Prodr., 1786, 80.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 50 m, May 4: *n. 2833* (epiphytic, lvs. bright green, petioles with brown rib below, sporangia l. brown).

Distribution: Seychelles to Polynesia.

Cheilanthes tenuifolia (Burm.) Sw., Syn., 1806, 129, 332.

Kaboeroeang, Loc. 5, alang-alang field, alt. 150 m, May 27: *n. 3210* (terrestrial, lvs. d. green, petioles d. brown, shining, sporangia d. green).

Distribution: tropical Asia to Australia and Polynesia.

Cyclopeltis novo-guineensis Ros., Fedde Repert. 10, 1912, 329.

Kaboeroeang, Loc. 5, K. Ampas, on rocks in rivulet, alt. 50 m, May 27: *n. 3214* (terrestrial, lvs. shining d. green above, dull l. green below, petioles green of brownish green, sporangia brown).

Distribution: Talaud, New Guinea.

Cyclophorus acrostichoides (Forst. f.) Presl, Epim., 1849, 130.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Goegoeti, G. Ligòjer, old forest on limestone, alt. 100 m, June 24: *n. 3599* (epiphytic, lvs. coriaceous, dirty l. green, sporangia cinnamon-brown).

Distribution: India to Australia and Polynesia.

Cyclophorus adnascens (Sw.) Desv., Berl. Mag. 5, 1811, 300.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, in coconut plantation, alt. 6 m, April 23: *n. 2476* (climbing, lvs. l. green, sporangia coffee-brown; nat. n.: *ambaliáng'a*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 260 m, May 23: *n. 3147* (epiphytic, lvs. l. green, sporangia ruddy brown) — Miangas, Loc. 9, G. Kota, on rocks, alt. 90 m, June 11: *n. 3389* (same annotations as n. 3147).

Distribution: paleotropic.

Davallia solida (Forst. f.) Sw., Schrad. Journ. 1800[2], 1801, 87.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 60 m, May 2: *n. 2756* (epiphytic, lvs. l. green, slightly paler below, petioles l. green, sporangia l. brown) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 260 m, May 23: *n. 3145* (same annotations as n. 2756, rhizome with dark brown ramenta).

Distribution: tropical Asia to Australia and Polynesia.

Diplazium silvaticum (Bory) Sw., Syn., 1806, 92.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, old forest, alt. 20 m, June 29: *n. 3678* (terrestrial, lvs. d. green above, l. green below, petioles brownish black, sporangia l. brown).

Distribution: pantropic.

Drynaria quercifolia (L.) Sm., Journ. Bot. 3, 1841, 398.

Miangas, Loc. 9, G. Soro, open slope, alt. 60 m, June 11: *n. 3386*

(epiphytic, lvs. bright green, slightly darker above, sporangia l. brown; nat. n.: *tàbeng*).

Distribution: tropical Asia to Australia and Polynesia.

Drynaria rigidula (Sw.) Bedd., Ferns Br. Ind., 1869, t. 314.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Goegoeti, riverbank, alt. 40 m, June 26: *n. 3622* (epiphytic, lvs. d. green, slightly paler below, petioles d. brown, sporangia d. cinnamon-brown; nat. n.: *wéka-wéka*).

Distribution: tropical Asia to Polynesia.

Drynaria sparsisora (Desv.) Moore, Ind., 1862, 348.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 90 m, June 21: *n. 3503* (epiphytic, lvs. bright green, shining, nerves l. yellow above, brown below, sporangia brown).

Distribution: Ceylon to tropical Australia and Polynesia.

Dryopteris Benoitiana (Gaud.) v. A. v. R., Mal. Ferns, 1908, 225.

Miangas, Loc. 9, coconut plantation, alt. 5 m, June 12: *n. 3411* (terrestrial, lvs. dull green, petioles greenish brown, sporangia brown; nat. n.: *paroewángi*).

Distribution: Miangas, Moluccas.

Dryopteris calcarata (Bl.) O. Ktze, Rev. Gen. Pl. 2, 1891, 812.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, bank of K. Bahewa, on rocks, alt. 30 m, May 12: *n. 2968* (lvs. bright green above, slightly paler below, petioles pale brown at base, sporangia greenish brown).

Distribution: India and S. China to Polynesia.

Dryopteris gongylodes (Schk.) O. Ktze, Rev. Gen. Pl. 2, 1891, 811.

Salebaboe, Loc. 6, Lota swamp near Moronge, alt. 5 m, May 28: *n. 3220* (terrestrial, lvs. bright green, paler below, petioles l. green, sporangia brown, rhizome d. brown).

Distribution: pantropic.

Dryopteris invisa (Forst. f.) O. Ktze, Rev. Gen. Pl. 2, 1891, 813.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, cleared grounds, alt. 20 m, June 29: *n. 3672* (terrestrial, lvs. bright green, petioles d. brown, sporangia brown; nat. n.: *karahègóémi*).

Distribution: Philippines, Morotai, New Guinea, Polynesia.

Dryopteris unita (L.) O. Ktze, Rev. Gen. Pl. 2, 1891, 811.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, coconut plantation, alt. 5 m, April 23: *n. 2515* (lvs. d. green, petioles shining, almost black, sporangia dark brown).

Distribution: Mascarenes, Seychelles, tropical Asia to Polynesia.

Dryopteris spec.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, steep bank of K. Tatamboewe, alt. 50 m, May 3: *n. 2786a*; old forest, bank of rivulet, alt. 50 m, May 3: *n. 2788* (terrestrial, lvs. l. green, petioles brown, l. green when young, sporangia brown, young leaves slimy).

Remark: According to an annotation by Dr. Posthumus these two specimens are identical with a specimen from New Guinea (coll. *Docters van Leeuwen n. 10734*).

Humata Gaimardiana (Gaud.) Sm., Lond. Journ. Bot. 1, 1842, 425.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 260 m, May 23: *n. 3146* (climbing, lvs. bright green, paler below, petioles l. green, sporangia l. brown, rhizome reddish brown).

Distribution: Birma and Malay Peninsula to Polynesia.

Hymenolepis mucronata Fée, Gen., 1850—'52, 82.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest on riverbank, alt. 50 m, May 1: *n. 2704* (epiphytic, lvs. l. green, midrib in older leaves violet below, sporangia cinnamon-brown).

Distribution: tropical Asia to Australia and Polynesia.

Lindsaya concinna Sm., Journ. Bot. 3, 1841, 415.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 60 m, June 22: *n. 3544* (terrestrial, lvs. d. green, petioles and sporangia d. brown).

Distribution: Borneo, Philippines, Morotai.

Lindsaya decomposita Willd., Sp. Pl. 5, 1810, 425.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 100 m, April 30: *n. 2685* (terrestrial, lvs. d. green, petioles shining d. brown, sporangia d. brown); old forest, alt. 80 m, May 2: *n. 2753* (same annotations as n. 2685).

Morotai, Marilako, old forest, alt. 20 m, June 28: *n. 3644* (same annotations as n. 2685).

Distribution: tropical Asia to Australia and Polynesia.

Lindsaya gracillima Cop., in Perk., Fragm., 1905, 181.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, on rocks in ravine, alt. 50 m, May 5: *n. 2848* (terrestrial, lvs. bright green, petioles shining d. brown, sporangia d. brown).

Distribution: Philippines, Talaud.

Lindsaya pectinata Bl., Enum., 1828, 217.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 60 m, April 30: *n. 2687* (climbing, lvs. dull green, stem d. brown, sporangia d. brown).

Distribution: tropical Asia to New Guinea.

Lindsaya tenuifolia Bl., Enum., 1828, 219.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 60 m, April 30: *n. 2684* (terrestrial, lvs. and petioles l. green, sporangia d. brown); old forest, alt. 220 m, May 2: *n. 2759* (same annotations as n. 2684) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 300 m, May 22: *n. 3118* (same annotations as n. 2684).

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 60 m, June 21: *n. 3519* (same annotations as n. 2684).

Distribution: Java?, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas (Morotai, Ternate, Ceram), New Guinea, Polynesia.

Microlepia manilensis Presl, Tent., 1836, 125.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 80 m, May 4: *n. 2822* (terrestrial, lvs. l. green, petioles brown, sporangia pale brown).

Distribution: Java?, Celebes, Talaud, Philippines.

Monogramma paradoxa (Fée) Bedd., Ferns Br. Ind., suppl., 1876, 24.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 100 m, June 21: *n. 3524* (epiphytic, lvs. bright green, sporangia brown).

Distribution: Ceylon to Polynesia.

Nephrolepis biserrata (Sw.) Schott, Gen. Fil. 2, 1834, 10.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 50 m, April 24: *n. 2521* (terrestrial, lvs. bright green, petioles d. brown, sporangia coffee-brown) — Loc. 2, old forest, bank of rivulet, alt. 50 m, May 3: *n. 2787* (same annotations as n. 2521) — Miangas, Loc. 9, in coconut plantation, alt. 5 m, June 12: *n. 3409* (same annotations as n. 2521; nat. n. **ára'ápa*).

Distribution: pantropic.

Nephrolepis hirsutula (Forst. f.) Presl, Tent., 1836, 79.

Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, wayside, sec. forest, alt. 20 m, May 26: *n. 3192* (terrestrial, lvs. d. green above, slightly paler below, petioles shining d. brown, sporangia d. brown) — Miangas, Loc. 9, in coconut plantation, alt. 5 m, June 12: *n. 3410* (terrestrial, lvs. bright green, petioles l. green, sporangia brown).

Distribution: pantropic.

Polypodium harpophyllum Zenker in O. Ktze, Linnaea 24, 1851, 256.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 80 m, June 21: *n. 3502* (epiphytic, lvs. dull green, paler below, stems and petioles brown, sporangia brown).

Distribution: paleotropic.

Polypodium heracleum O. Ktze, Bot. Zeit., 1848, 117.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, riverbank, old forest, alt. 40 m, May 3: *n. 2789* (epiphytic, lvs. l. green, midrib brown below, sporangia l. yellow when young, l. brown with age).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Philippines, Moluccas, New Guinea.

Polypodium longissimum Bl., Enum., 1828, 127.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, open swampy grounds, alt. 10 m, April 25: *n. 2573* (lvs. bright green, sporangia cinnamon-brown; nat. n. *móéra ararintak'a*).

Distribution: tropical Asia to Polynesia.

Polypodium musifolium Bl., Enum., 1828, 134.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Goegoeti, G. Ligòjer, old forest, alt. 50 m, June 27: *n. 3629* (epiphytic, lvs. bright green, slightly paler below, midrib brown below, sporangia very d. brown).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Philippines, Moluccas, New Guinea, ? Lesser Sunda Islands.

Polypodium obtusissimum C. Chr., Ind., 1906, 549.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, alt. 400 m, May 31: *n. 3237* (epiphytic, lvs. d. green above, paler below, sporangia d. coffee-brown).

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 60 m, June 22: *n. 3552* (epiphytic, lvs. dull l. green, paler below, sporangia brown).

Distribution: Philippines, Talaud, Morotai.

Polypodium phymatodes L., Mant., 1771, 306.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 50 m, May 4: *n. 2829* (epiphytic, lvs. bright green, paler below, petioles brown, sporangia d. brown, rhizome greenish brown); old forest, alt. 150 m, May 11: *n. 2951* (same annotations as n. 2829); some locality and date: *n. 2952* (same annotations as n. 2829) — Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, sec. forest, wayside, alt. 20 m, May 26: *n. 3196* (terrestrial, further same annotations as n. 2829) — Miangas, Loc. 9, in coconut plantation, alt. 5 m, June 11: *n. 3376* (same annotations as n. 3196; nat. n. *melángko*).

Distribution: paleotropic.

Polypodium punctatum (L.) Sw., Schrad. Journ. 1800[2], 1801, 21.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest on riverbank, alt. 50 m, May 1: *n. 2731* (epiphytic, lvs. l. green, sporangia l. brown).

Distribution: paleotropic.

Pteris longipinnula Wall., Cat., 1828, n. 108.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest on bank of K. Tatamboewe, alt. 50 m, April 30: *n. 2700* (stout terrestrial, lvs. d. green, midrib and petioles shining d. brown, sporangia d. brown); same loc., old forest, alt. 200 m, May 10: *n. 2932* (terrestrial, lvs. d. green above, paler below, midrib and petioles very d. brown, sporangia cinnamon-brown, indusium l. green).

Distribution: tropical Asia to Polynesia.

Pteris melanocaulon Fée, Gen., 1850—'52, 127.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, bank of K. Tatamboewe, alt. 50 m, May 2: *n. 2750* (epiphytic, lvs. bright green, petioles shining very d. brown, indusium l. green, sporangia l. brown).

Distribution: Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas (Soela Islands, Ceram, Ambon).

Pteris vittata L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 1074.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, edge of landslide, alt. 50 m, May 11: *n. 2959* (lvs. l. green, petioles l. greenish brown, sporangia l. brown; nat. n.: *aráboe* **wówo'mbátoe*).

Distribution: tropical Asia to Australia and Polynesia.

Schizoloma ensifolium (Sw.) Sm., Journ. Bot. 3, 1841, 414.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, east of Beo, alang-alang field, alt. 100 m, April 25: *n. 2590* (lvs. bright green, petioles brown, sporangia brown); sunny skirt of forest, alt. 120 m, April 27: *n. 2668* (same annotations as n. 2590) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, south of Liroeng, alang-alang field, alt. 50 m, May 21: *n. 3087* (same annotations as n. 2590).

Distribution: paleotropic.

Schizoloma ovatum (Sm.) Cop., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot., suppl. 4, 1906, 252.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope under shrubs, alt. 350 m, May 31: *n. 3234* (lvs. bright green, petioles d. brown, sporangia brown).

Distribution: Borneo, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud.

Taenitis blechnoides (Willd.) Sw., Syn., 1806, 24, 220.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 60 m, June 22: *n. 3545* (terrestrial, lvs. d. green, paler below, petioles d. brown, green towards apex, sporangia d. brown); Marilako, old forest, alt. 20 m, June 28: *n. 3647* (same annotations as n. 3545).

Distribution: paleotropic.

Tapeinidium moluccanum (Bl.) C. Chr., Garden's Bull. Str. Settl. 4, 1929, 399.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, top of G. Piapi, shady place, alt. 500 m, May 31: *n. 3238* (terrestrial, lvs. bright green, petioles violet-brown, sporangia l. brownish green).

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, swampy place, alt. 100 m, June 25: *n. 3609* (terrestrial, lvs. d. green, slightly paler below, petioles d. brown, paler and more green towards apex, sporangia very d. brown).

Distribution: Borneo, Celebes, Moluccas (Ceram, Ambon), New Guinea.

Vittaria elongata Sw., Syn., 1806, 109, 302.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open forest, alt. 350 m, June 2: *n. 3325* (epiphytic, lvs. bright green, sporangia almost black).

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 60 m, June 20: *n. 3467* (entire plant d. green).

Distribution: tropical Asia to Australia and Polynesia.

SPERMATOPHYTA

GYMNOSPERMA

TAXACEAE (J. Wasscher)

Podocarpus neriifolia D. Don in Lambert, Gen. Pinus, ed. 1, 1824, 21.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, alt. 350 m, May 31: *n. 3261* (tree, 8 m high, bole 4.6 m, straight, bark grey, minutely scaling, lvs. coriaceous, bright green, pink when young, anthers greenish white to l. pink; nat. n.: *linóék'a*).

Distribution: Himalaya and S. China to Polynesia.

Remarks: This specimen was erroneously mentioned by Wasscher in his study on the Malaysian species of *Podocarpus* (Blumea 4, 1941, 359) under *P. polystachya* R. Br., at a suggestion of Dr. Lam; the specimen was not available at the time and could, therefore, not be checked. After the publication of his paper, however, the specimen was eventually discovered in the Rijksherbarium and was then identified as *P. neriifolia*. On the map on p. 428 in Wasscher's paper, the area of *P. polystachya* is accordingly drawn to wide.

GNETACEAE (F. Markgraf)

Gnetum cuspidatum Bl., Rumphia 4, 1848, 5; Markgraf, Bull. Jard. Bot. Buit., Sér. III, 10, 1929, 475.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, frequent in old forest, alt. 170 m, May 2: *n. 2760* (long liana, infl. l. green); alt. 250 m, May 8: *n. 2909* (long liana, lvs. d. green and shining above, paler below, branchlets cinnamon-brown, infl. green, fr. l. green, reddish brown at apex, eaten roasted; nat. n.: *baránggoh*) — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, light forest, alt. 350 m, Jnue 2: *n. 3317* (stem containing a great quantity of very bitter liquid; same nat. n.).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Talaud, Soela.

Gnetum gnemon L., Mant. I, 1767, 125.

Var. **domesticum** (Rumph.), Markgraf, l.c., 1929, 437.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, east of Beo, sec. forest, alt. 100 m, April 24: *n. 2545* (small tree, 4 m high, fr. bluish green; nat. n.: *saédeh*) — Loc. 2, frequent in old forest along riverbank, alt. 15 m, May 16: *n. 3034* (small tree, 8 m high, bark greyish brown, branchlets brown, lvs. shining above, fr. dull olive-green; nat. n.: *saédeh*; bast fibres used for making ropes) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 22: *n. 3113* (small tree, 8 m high, 0.16 m diam., bole 4 m high, straight, fr. dirty

green, slightly red at apex; nat. n.: *saédeh* (Tl.) or *genémoh* (Malay); leaves and fruits eaten as vegetables).

Morotai, Loc. 12, fairly frequent in old forest, alt. 130 m, June 22: *n. 3557* (small tree, 8 m high, fr. l. green; nat. n.: *roekiti*).

Distribution of the variety: Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas, Soemba, New Guinea, Bismarck- and Solomon Islands.

Var. **silvestre** (Brongn.) Parl. in DC., Prodr. 16, 1868, 349; Markgraf, l.c. 1929, 443.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, alt. 350 m, May 31: *n. 3275* (small tree, 4 m high, fr. l. green, turning orange-yellow; nat. n.: *saédeh*).

Distribution of the variety: N. Celebes, Talaud, Moluccas (Ceram, Ambon), New Guinea, Solomon Isl., Bismarck Isl., Fiji.

Distribution of the species: Assam to Fiji.

ANGIOSPERMAE

Monocotyledoneae

PANDANACEAE

Freycinetia De-Vriesei Solms, Linnaea 42, 1878—1879, 96.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, frequent, alt. 50 m, May 1: *n. 2724.*

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud, Halmahera.

Pandanus latissimus Bl., Rumphia 1, 1835, t. 53.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, N. Maraloem, on the beach, May 16: *n. 3041* (tree, 5 m, stiltroots 2 m; nat. n.: *ababá'a*).

Distribution: Talaud, Banda.

Pandanus tectorius Sol., Journ. Linn. Soc. 17, 1878, 63.

Karakelong, Loc. 9, G. Piapi, very frequent on sunny slope, alt. 350 m, May 31: *n. 3284* and *3285* (tree, 3—3.5 m; nat. n.: *pándan'a*).

Distribution: Mascarenes to Polynesia.

ALISMACEAE

Caldesia reniformis (D. Don) Makino, Bot. Mag. Tokyo 20, 1906, 34.

Salebaboe, Loc. 6, Lota swamp near Moronge, alt. 5 m, frequent, May 28: *n. 3224* (herb, lvs. yellowish green, calyx l. green, corolla white, filaments white, anthers yellow, ovary l. green).

Distribution: Madagascar, India, China, Japan, Talaud, N. Australia.

TRIURIDACEAE

Sciaphila tenella Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 515.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, Pasir Malap, old forest, alt. 40 m, May 13: *n. 2996* (entire plant bright red, saprophyte).

Distribution: W. Java, W. Borneo, Philippines, Talaud.

GRAMINEAE (J. Th. Henrard)

Brachiaria reptans (L.) Gardn. & Hubb. in Hooker, Ic. Pl., 1938, 3, t. 3363.

Miangas, Loc. 9, G. Soro, grass-slope, alt. 80 m, June 11: *n. 3395* (lvs. l. green, infl. l. green; nat. n.: *lelámpah*).

Distribution: pantropic.

Cenchrus Brownei Roem. & Schult., Syst. 2, 1817, 258.

Miangas, Loc. 9, G. Batoe, open grass-slope, alt. 70 m, June 11: *n. 3393* (lvs. bright green, infl. l. green; nat. n.: *dendí'i*).

Distribution: Annam, Java, Celebes, Philippines, Miangas, Moluccas, Timor, New Guinea, Australia, tropical America.

Centotheca latifolia (Osb.) Trin., Fund. Agrost., 1820, 141.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 100 m, April 27: *n. 2647* (lvs. l. bluish green, infl. l. green); recent landslide, alt. 40 m, May 3: *n. 2781*).

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest along trail, 330 m alt., June 25: *n. 3612* (nat. n.: *djéla-djéla*).

Distribution: India and S. China to Polynesia.

Coelorhachis glandulosa (Trin.) Stapf, in Ridley, Fl. Mal. Penins. 5, 1925, 204.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, wayside, between alang-alang, alt. 100 m, April 26: *n. 2620* (entire plant bright green, infl. green).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Philippines (Panay, Palawan), Talaud, Moluccas (Ceram), Solomon Islands, New Caledonia.

Coix Lacryma-Jobi L., Sp. Pl., 1735, 972.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, cleared grounds, alt. 20 m, June 29: *n. 3671* (l. green, fr. l. green when young, turning yellow, d. brown and grey with age, ultimately white; nat. n.: *momoróétoe*).

Distribution: originally paleotropic, now pantropic.

Cyrtococcum oxyphyllum (Hochst.) Stapf in Hooker, Ic. Pl., 1922, t. 3096.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, border of recent landslide, alt. 50 m, May 11: *n. 2960* (stem prostrate, lvs. bright green, l. green below, infl. l. green).

Distribution: Seychelles to Philippines, New Guinea and Australia.

Digitaria microbachne (Presl) Henr., Meded. 's Rijks Herb. 61, 1930, 13.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, sunny bank of K. Bahewa, recent landslide, alt. 40 m, May 3: *n. 2780* (entire plant l. green, infl. very l. green).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea.

Echinochloa colonum (L.) Link, Hort. Berol. 2, 1833, 209.

Karakelong, Loc. 8, north of Dahang, grass vegetation, alt. 5 m, June 4: *n. 3347* (lvs. bright green, vaginae of older leaves reddish, infl. l. green; nat. n.: *abátoem'a*).

Distribution: pantropic.

Eragrostis unioloides Nees in Steudel, Syn. Pl. Glum. 1, 1854, 264.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, wayside, alt. 100 m, April 27: *n. 2670* (lvs. green, infl. green, brown with age).

Distribution: India and S. China to Philippines, Celebes, Talaud, Soela Islands and Timor.

Garnotia stricta Brongn. in Bot. Duperr. Voy., 1829, 132, t. 21.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, bank of K. Tatamboewe, on rocks, alt. 50 m, May 12: *n. 2971* (entire plant l. green).

Distribution: India, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas (Ternate).

Hymenachne amplexicaulis (Rudge) Nees, Agrost. Bras., 1829, 276.

Salebaboe, Loc. 6, Lota swamp near Moronge, alt. 5 m, May 28: *n. 3222* (stem prostrate, lvs. bright green, infl. l. green).

Distribution: India and S. China to Philippines and Moluccas, tropical America.

Ischaemum muticum L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 1049.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, open grounds, alt. 5 m, April 23: *n. 2483* (lvs. green, bracts l. green, anthers l. yellow, style white; nat. n.: *baráboet'a*); sec. forest, alt. 80 m, April 24: *n. 2526* (climbing over shrubs, several m long, lvs. l. green, vaginae brown, stigma white; nat. n.: *baráboet'a*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, wayside, alt. 20 m, May 21: *n. 3091.*

Distribution: India to Philippines, New Guinea and the Solomon Islands.

Ischaemum polystachyum Presl, Rel. Haenk. 1, 1830, 328.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, wayside, alt. 5 m, April 28: *n. 2682* (stem more or less prostrate, lvs. dull green, ears l. green; nat. n.: *nanároh*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, wayside, alt. 20 m, May 21: *n. 3090* (stem partly prostrate, lvs. l. green, hairs white, ears l. green, style greenish white).

Distribution: India, Sumatra, Borneo, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas (Halmahera, Ceram), New Guinea.

Leptaspis urceolata (Roxb.) R. Br. in Benn., Pl. Jav. Rar., 1838, 23, t. 6.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, old forest, alt. 20 m, June 28: *n. 3640* (nat. n.: **bistiong kahomawogamaur*).

Distribution: Ceylon to Philippines and New Guinea.

Microstegium fasciculatum (L.) Henr., Blumea 3, 1940, 453.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest along trail, alt. 330 m, June 25: *n. 3613* (nat. n.: *djêla-djêla*).

Distribution: India and Indo China to Philippines, Celebes and Morotai.

Monerma repens (Forst.) Beauv., Agrost., 1812, 117.

Miangas, Loc. 9, P. Baronto, on limestone, alt. 7 m, June 11: *n. 3367a.*

Distribution: Ceylon to Polynesia.

Oplismenus undulatifolius (Ard.) Beauv., Agrost., 1812, 54.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, along trail, alt. 330 m, June 25: *n. 3614.*

Distribution: Europa to Asia and Australia.

Panicum Crus-galli L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 56.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, on gravel bank in K. Bahewa, alt. 15 m, May 15: *n. 3023.*

Distribution: pantropic.

Paspalum longifolium Roxb., Fl. Ind., ed. I, 1, 1820, 283.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, east of Beo, sunny wayside, alt. 100 m, April 26: *n. 2618* (bright green, infl. l. green when young, d. violet-red with age, style d. violet).

Distribution: India and S. China to Polynesia.

Saccharum spontaneum L., Mant. 2, 1771, 183.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, Pasir Malap, riverbank, alt. 20 m, May 14: *n. 3018* (herb, up to 4 m, infrutescences shining brownish-white; nat. n.: *boerâs'a*).

Distribution: India and S. China to Polynesia.

Sacciolepis aurita (Presl) Camus in Lecomte, Fl. Gén. Indo-Chine 7, 1922, 459.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, Donan Timbalang'a, shore of a small lake, alt. 250 m, May 24: *n. 3161* (lvs. bright green, infl. l. green).

Distribution: India, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Philippines, Talaud.

Sorghum laxiflorum Bailey, Bellenden-Ker Exped., 1889, 70.

Miangas, Loc. 9, G. Batoe, grass-covered slope, alt. 90 m, June 11: *n. 3392* (lvs. bright green, infl. l. green, awns violet-brown; nat. n.: *aoelídi*).

Distribution: Philippines (Luzon), Miangas, New Guinea, Australia.

Sorghum propinquum (Kunth) Hitchc., Lingn. Sc. Journ. 7, 1931, 249.

Karakelong, Loc. 8, north of Dahang, June 4: *n. 3350* (nat. n.: *ganggóleh*).

Morotai, Loc. 12, on gravel banks in river, June 23: *n. 3578* (herb, 4 m tall; nat. n.: *kakáno*).

Distribution: China, Tonkin, Sumatra, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas, Soemba.

Sporobolus elongatus R. Br., Prodr., 1810, 170.

Karakelong, Loc. 8, north of Dahang, wayside, alt. 5 m, June 4: *n. 3346* (nat. n.: *sinosóan'a*).

Distribution: Japan to Australia.

Themeda gigantea (Cav.) Hack. in DC., Mon. Phan. 6, 1889, 670.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, very frequent on open slope, alt. 300 m, June 2: *n. 3328* (nat. n.: **ámi'mpiápi*; together with *Scleria lithosperma* and *Cladium* spec. n. 3249, this species is the main component of the grassy vegetation of the slopes of Mt. Piapi).

Distribution: Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas.

CYPERACEAE

Cladium philippinense Merr., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 5, 1910, 171.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open slope: *n. 3248* (nat. n.: *papárah*).

Distribution: Philippines, Talaud.

Cyperus distans L. f., Suppl., 1781, 103.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, on gravel bank in river: *n. 3021.*

Distribution: pantropic.

Fimbristylis annua (All.) Roem. & Schult., Syst. 2, 1817, 95.

Miangas, Loc. 9, open slope: *n. 3388* (nat. n.: *tentarilómeh*).

Distribution: pantropic.

Fimbristylis miliacea (L.) Vahl, Enum. 2, 1806, 287.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest: *n. 2594* (nat. n.: *sinosóan*).

Distribution: pantropic.

Fimbristylis spathacea Roth, Nov. Sp. Pl., 1821, 24.

Miangas, Loc. 9, P. Baronto: *n. 3367.*

Distribution: pantropic.

Gahnia aspera (R. Br.) Spreng., Syst. 2, 1825, 114; Benl, Bot. Arch. 49, 1940, 176.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, alt. 460 m, May 31: *n. 3246* (fr. shining brown-orange coloured, bracts very d. brown; nat. n.: *nanàsi*).

Distribution: S. Japan, Brit. N. Borneo, Talaud, Australia, Polynesia.

Remarks: The genus comprises, according to Benl (l. c.) about 37 species. Of these 21 occur in Australia, 9 in Polynesia, 7 in New Zealand and 6 in Malaysia. The generic area reaches S. China and S. Japan in the northwest, Hawaii in the northeast, the Marquesas and Rapa in the east and Sumatra, British Malaya and Siam in the west, but its centre is undoubtedly the Australian continent. The same holds true concerning *G. aspera,* whose area extends as far east as Rapa and

Raivavae. Benl (l. c.) mentions Elphinstone Bay, Celebes, as a locality. This is almost certainly a mistake for Brit. N. Borneo.

Kyllinga brevifolia Rottb., Descr. Ic., 1773, 13, t. 4, fig. 3.
Karakelong, Loc. 2, on gravel bank in river: *n. 3031.*
Distribution: pantropic.

Mariscus cyperinus (Retz) Vahl, Enum., 2, 1806, 377.
Karakelong, Loc. 2, riverbank: *n. 2779*; *n. 2957* (nat. n.: *papárah*).
Distribution: India to Polynesia.

Mariscus pennatus (Lam.) Merr., Enum. Phil. Flow. Pl. 1, 1925, 113.
Karakelong, Loc. 1, border of mangrove vegetation: *n. 2512* — Miangas, Loc. 9, swamp: *n. 3415* (nat .n.: *pepántah*).
Distribution: paleotropic.

Rhynchospora corymbosa (L.) Britt., Trans. N. Y. Acad. Sci. 11, 1892, 84.
Salebaboe, Loc. 6, Lota swamp, frequent: *n. 3223.*
Distribution: pantropic.

Scleria hebecarpa Nees in Wight, Contrib., 1834, 117.
Var. **pubescens** C. B. Clarke in Hook. f., Fl. Br. Ind. 6, 1894, 689.
Miangas, Loc. 9, open slope: *n. 3387* (fr. shining greenish white; nat. n.: *tentáripa*).
Distribution: S.E. Asia and Malaysia.

Scleria lithosperma (L.) Sw., Prodr., 1788, 18.
Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open slope, frequent: *n. 3247* (infl. brown; nat. n.: *tentáripa*; before the paddy harvest some infrutescenses are bound together and deposited in the house in order to turn out the demons, cf. *indoeng padi* = mother of the paddy, in Java).
Distribution: pantropic.

Scleria scrobiculata Nees in Wight, Contrib., 1834, 117.
Karakelong, Loc. 1, wayside: *n. 2520* (fr. greenish white; nat. n.: *tentáripa*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, in alang-alang, very frequent: *n. 3152* (herb, up to 2.5 m, fr. and nat. n. as n. 2520).
Distribution: S.E. Asia to Micronesia.

Torulinium ferax (Rich.) Ham., Prodr. Pl. Ind. Occ., 1825, 151.
Karakelong, Loc. 2, riverbank, very frequent: *n. 3022.*
Distribution: pantropic.

PALMAE

Gronophyllum ? microcarpum Scheff., Ann. Jard. bot. Buit. 1, 1876, 153.
Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, 100 m alt., June 22: *n. 3551* (tree, 7 m high; nat. n.: *gomigo*).
Distribution: Morotai, Ceram, Ambon.

Mischophloeus paniculatus (Scheff.) Scheff., l.c. 152.
Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 50 m, May 3: *n. 2792* (tree on stilt-roots, about 9 m high, infl. l. yellow; nat. n.: *rabóéa*).
Distribution: Celebes, Talaud, Ternate, Batjan.

ARACEAE

Aglaonema oblongifolium (Roxb.) Kunth, Enum. 3, 1841, 55.
Karakelong, Loc. 2, Pasir Malap, frequent in forest on riverbank, alt. 20 m, May 14: *n. 2988* (nat. n.: *tentalás'a*) — Kaboeroeang, Loc. 5, in cleared forest, alt. 100 m, May 27: *n. 3209* (fr. shining fiery red).
Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Borneo, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas.

Cyrtosperma Merkusii (Hassk.) Schott, Oest. Bot. Woch. Bl., 1859, 61.
Miangas, Loc. 9, in swamps: *n. 3406* (terrestrial, cult.; nat. n.: *poeráha* [Tal.] or *laloega* [Malay]).
Distribution: Sumatra to New Guinea (the specimen is spineless and conformable with specimens from Halmahera in Herb. Buitenzorg).

Homalomena aromatica (Roxb.) Schott, Melet. 1, 1832, 20.
Karakelong, Loc. 1, old forest, alt. 90 m, April 26: *n. 2636* (terrestrial, spadix

yellow) — Loc. 2, Pasir Malap, frequent in forest on riverbank, alt. 20 m, May 14: *n. 2999* (nat. n.: *pòhoh*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, sec. forest, alt. 180 m, May 20: *n. 3060* (spatha and spadix creamy white).

Distribution: India to New Guinea.

Pothos Rumphii Schott, Melet. 1, 1832, 21.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 60 m, May 2: *n. 2740* (climbing, about 40 m high); Pasir Malap, in forest on riverbank, alt. 20 m, May 14: *n. 3012* (nat. n.: *ála'oewàn'a*).

Distribution: Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea.

Rhaphidophora Korthalsii Schott, Ann. Mus. Lugd.-Bat. 1, 1863, 129.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, Pasir Malap, riverbank, May 14: *n. 3019* (nat. n.: *timàs'a*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Java, Borneo, Talaud.

Scindapsus Cuscuaria (Aubl.) Presl, Epimel., 1849, 242.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 8: *n. 2899* (climbing high; nat. n.: *ára'oewàn'a*).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Talaud, Ambon.

FLAGELLARIACEAE

Flagellaria indica L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 333.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, fairly frequent in old forest, alt. 250 m, May 10: *n. 2935* (flow. whitish yellow; nat. n.: *oewàt'a*) — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open slope, 450 m, May 31: *n. 3244* (protandrous; nat. n.: *oewàk'a*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, very frequent in old forest, alt. 260 m, May 23: *n. 3134* (long liana; nat. n.: *oewàk'a*).

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, frequent on riverbank, June 28: *n. 3642* (liana, 10 m long; nat. n.: *róma*).

Distribution: paleotropic.

COMMELINACEAE

Aclisia sorzogonensis E. Mey. in Presl, Rel. Haenk. 1, 1827, 138, t. 25.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, swampy place, alt. 20 m, April 25: *n. 2599* (large herb, lvs. l. green, calyx and style white, ovary l. green; nat. n.: *bambaráwan*) — Loc. 2, on recent landslide, alt. 50 m, May 11: *n. 2947* (herb, stem prostrate and rooting, top curved upward, lvs. l. green, calyx, corolla, stamens and pistil white, fr. d. greyish blue; nat. n.: *pamparáwan'a*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 320 m, May 23: *n. 3139* (same annotations as n. 2947, no fruits) — Miangas, Loc. 9, shady place on hillslope, alt. 5 m, June 11: *n. 3360* (same annotations as n. 2947, filaments and ovary greenish white, anthers yellow, fr. green when young, black with age).

Morotai, Loc. 12, Goegoeti, cleared grounds along riverbank, alt. 40 m, June 23: *n. 3574* (same annotations as n. 2947, herb to 2 m high, fr. d. violet-brown).

Distribution: India and S. China to Polynesia.

Aneilema vitiense Seem., Fl. Vit., 1865—'73, 314, t. 96.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, cleared old forest, alt. 90 m, April 26: *n. 2633* (herb, slightly succulent, l. green, corolla white, ovary l. green, fr. green).

Distribution: N. Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas (Ternate, Batjan, Ambon), Kai Islands, Timor, New Guinea, Micronesia, Polynesia.

Commelina nudiflora L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 4.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, in coconut plantation, alt. 100 m, April 25: *n. 2595* (herb, partly prostrate, lvs. l. green, calyx very l. green, corolla bright blue; nat. n.: *sampadóéri*).

Distribution: pantropic.

Cyanotis axillaris (L.) D. Don, Prodr. Fl. Nepal, 1825, 46.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, alang-alang field, alt. 100 m, April 25: *n. 2592* (herb, partly prostrate, lvs. l. green, slightly violet below, calyx l. green, corolla l. violet, internodes at base of the plant wine red, at the top l. green; nat. n.: *borontimóék'a*).

Distribution: India and China to Australia.

Floscopa scandens Lour., Fl. For. Cochinch., 1790, 193.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, open sec. forest, alt. 15 m, April 25: *n. 2602* (herb, lvs. bright green, calyx greenish white, corolla l. violet, ovary l. green; nat. n.: *sampadóéri*).

Distribution: India and China to Australia.

LILIACEAE

Dianella coerulea Sims, Curt. Bot. Mag. 15, 1801, 505.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, sunny slope, 400 m alt., May 31: *n. 3245* (calyx and corolla blue, filaments white, anthers yellow, style white, fr. d. blue-green; nat. n.: *marióéoe*).

Distribution: Philippines, Talaud, New Guinea to Fiji, New Caledonia and N. Australia.

Smilax zeylanica L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 1029.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, frequent in old forest, alt. 260 m, May 22: *n. 3108* (long climbing; nat. n.: *saráwat'oe *wáwi*).

Distribution: Madagascar?, India to New Guinea (not known from the Philippines).

AMARYLLIDACEAE

Crinum asiaticum L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 292.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, on the beach, April 23: *n. 2518* (herb, 2 m, flow. fragrant; nat. n.: *garòhom'a*).

Distribution: India and Polynesia.

Curculigo capitulata (Lour.) O. Ktze, Rev. Gen. Pl., 1891, 703.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, frequent in sec. forest, 200 m alt., May 24: *n. 3158* (terrestrial, flow. yellow).

Morotai, Loc. 12, Goegoeti, frequent in old forest, 40 m alt., June 26: *n. 3626* (nat. n.: *pòpóko*).

Distribution: India and S. China to N. Australia.

TACCACEAE

Tacca leontopetaloides (L.) Baill., Hist. Pl. 13, 1894, 169.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, coastal forest, alt. 1 m, April 23: *n. 2519* (herb, 2.4 m high, lvs., corolla and calyx green, anthers white, fr. d. green) — Miangas, Loc. 9, behind the beach, alt. 2 m, June 12: *n. 3405* (herb, lvs. d. green, nerves and petioles greenish white, calyx green, corolla l. green, filaments brown, l. green at base, anthers, style and stigma white, fr. d. green, tuber brown; nat. n.: *anoewoe*).

Distribution: paleotropic.

Tacca palmata Bl., Enum., 1827, 83.

Kaboeroeang, Loc. 5, sec. forest, alt. 150 m, May 27: *n. 3206* (lvs. l. green, petiole and stem dirty green, fr. bright red, green when young, tuber white) — Miangas, Loc. 9, G. Kota, small grove, alt. 90 m, June 11: *n. 3390* (herb, same annotations as n. 3206, corolla dirty yellow, anthers l. dirty yellow, stigma white, margin violet).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Timor, Micronesia.

DIOSCOREACEAE

Dioscorea oppositifolia L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 1033.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 60 m, April 24: *n. 2544* (nat. n.: *saràpat'a*).

Distribution: India to Moluccas (not known from Philippines).

ZINGIBERACEAE

Alpinia malaccensis (Burm.) Roscoe, Trans. Linn. Soc. 8, 1808, 345.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, on cleared grounds, June 29: *n. 3668* (herb, 2.5 m, flow. white, lip with yellow margin and red basis).

Distribution: India, Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Moluccas (Morotai, Ceram).

Alpinia pectinata Ridl. (ined. ?).

Karakelong, Loc. 1, very frequent in sec. forest, April 25: *n. 2584* (infl. stiffly curved downward, flow. white, fr. pink; nat. n.: *peòtah*) — Loc. 2: *n. 2808* (same annotations and nat. n.).

Distribution: Talaud, Celebes.

Remarks: These specimens were not seen by us. The identification was made at Buitenzorg but the name *Alpinia pectinata* is not to be found in the Index Kewensis. Yet, the species is mentioned since it is one of the most frequent plants in secondary vegetations.

Alpinia pubiflora (Benth.) K. Schum. in Engl., Pflanzenr. 20, 1904, 313.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 2 m, April 23: *n. 2517* (flow. white, lip purple); sec. forest, alt. 60 m, April 24: *n. 2548* (herb, 2.5 m, flow. dirty white, lip lilac, fr. dull red; nat. n.: *tentáiris*).

Distribution: Mindanao, Talaud, New Guinea, Carolines.

Amomum roseum (T. & B.) Benth. & Hook. f., Gen. Pl. 3, 1883, 644.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, very frequent in cleared forest, alt. 30 m, April 25: *n. 2588* (herb, 6 m, flow. white; nat. n.: *anàm'a*); alt. 100 m, April 26: *n. 2651* (same nat. n.) — Loc. 2, riverbank, May 2: *n. 2972* (same nat. n.) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, very frequent in old forest, 220 m alt., May 22: *n. 3114* (herb, 2.5 m, flow. l. pink; nat. n.: *anàm'a*).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud, Ternate, Ambon.

Costus speciosus (Koen.) Sm., Trans. Linn. Soc. 1, 1800, 249.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 8 m, April 24: *n. 2555* (herb, 3 m, flow. white; nat. n.: *tentajàsoe*).

Morotai, Loc. 12, cleared grounds on riverbank, alt. 40 m, June 23: *n. 3577* (herb, 4 m, flow. white, fr. red; nat. n.: *óéga-óéga*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula to Micronesia.

Riedelia curviflora Oliv. in Hooker, Ic. Pl., 1883, t. 1419.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, 100 m alt., April 27: *n. 2644* (herb, 3.2 m, flow. white; nat. n.: *randóéloeng*) — Loc. 2, very frequent in forest on riverbank, alt. 50 m, May 1: *n. 2726* (nat. n.: *dendóéloeng*).

Distribution: Talaud, Moluccas (Boeroe, Ceram, Ambon, Aroe), New Guinea, Solomon Isl.

MARANTACEAE

Donax canniformis (Forst. f.) K. Schum., Bot. Jahrb. 15, 1893, 440.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, fairly frequent in sec. forest, alt. 180 m, May 20: *n. 3061* (herb, to 2 m high, lvs. bright green, above, paler below, calyx, pedicels and corolla white, fr. l. green when young, greenish white with age, pendulous; nat. n.: *bawambánan'a*).

Morotai, Loc. 12, very frequent in old forest, in moist places, alt. 20 m, June 29: *n. 3669* (strongly branched herb, to 4 m high, same annotations as n. 3061, lip slightly violet; nat. n.: *biáwa*).

Distribution: Java, Borneo, Celebes, Formosa, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas, Micronesia, New Guinea, Bismarck Archipelago and Solomon Islands.

ORCHIDACEAE (J. J. Smith)

Appendicula reflexa Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 301; J. J. Smith, Bull. Jard. bot. Buit. Sér. III, 11, 1930, 73.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, in old forest, alt. 50 m, May 4: *n. 2832* (epiphytic, lvs. bright green, vagina l. green, thick coriaceous, flow. entirely greenish white, column l. green) — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, in light forest, alt. 350 m, June 2: *n. 3326* (same annotations as n. 2832).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea, Micronesia.

Calanthe veratrifolia R. Br., Bot. Reg. 9, 1823, t. 271.

Var. **lancipetala** J. J. Smith, l.c. 1930, 74.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, in old forest on narrow ridge, alt. 150 m, April 30: *n. 2689* (terrestrial, flow. white, base of lip l. yellow).

Distribution of the variety: endemic; of the species: India to Philippines and New Guinea.

Calymnanthera prob. **paniculata** (J. J. S.) Schlecht., Orch. D. N. Guin., 1913, 955; J. J. Smith, l.c. 1930, 80.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 60 m, June 21: *n. 3501.*

Distribution: Morotai, New Guinea.

Dendrobium dimorphum J. J. Smith, l.c. 1930, 75.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, on open summit under shrubs, alt. 500 m, June 2: *n. 3327* (terrestrial, flow. white; nat. n.: **bóésa'oe palián*).

Distribution: endemic.

Remark: Closely related to *D. paucilaciniatum* J. J. S. from Ternate.

Dendrobium hydrophilum J. J. Smith, Bull. Dépt. Agr. Ind. néerl. 19, 1908, 17.

Var. **morotaiense** J. J. Smith, Bull. Jard. bot. Buit., Sér. III, 11, 1930, 75.

Morotai, Loc. 12, in old forest, alt. 60 m, June 22: *n. 3553* (epiphytic, flow. white).

Distribution: of the variety: endemic; of the species: Morotai, New Guinea.

Dendrobium prob. **Koordersii** J. J. Smith, Orch. amb., 1905, 67 and l.c. 1930, 77.

Morotai, Loc. 12, living plant n. 18, cult. in Hort. Bog. sub *n. 133*.

Distribution: Celebes, Ambon, Soela-besi, Morotai.

Dendrobium lancifolium A. Rich., Sert. Astrol., 1834, 20, t. 8; J. J. Smith, l.c. 1930, 80.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, under shrubs, alt. 350 m, May 31: *n. 3242* (terrestrial, flow. white with violet tips, petals and lip violet striped and spotted; nat. n.: **oewak'oe piápi*).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud, Moluccas.

Dendrobium Mirbelianum Gaud., Voy. Freyc. Bot., 1826, 423, t. 38; J. J. Smith, l.c. 1930, 77.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, in coastal forest on *Sonneratia*, sea level, April 23: *n. 2509* (epiphytic, flow. yellow with faint violet-brown stripes).

Distribution: Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea.

Dendrobium quadrialatum J. J. Smith, Bull. Jard. bot. Buit., Sér. III, 5, 1922, 87 and 11, 1930, 78.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 100 m, June 21: *n. 3522* (epiphytic, flow. pink, lip red with green basis, column and ovary green).

Distribution: Morotai, Ternate, Tidore, New Guinea.

Dendrobium talaudense J. J. Smith, l.c. 1930, 78.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 260 m, May 23: *n. 3154* (epiphytic, flow. white with blue tips, ovary white).

Distribution: endemic.

Remark: Closely related to *D. molle* J. J. S. from New Guinea.

Dendrobium ternatense J. J. Smith, Bull. Dépt. Agric. Ind. néerl. 22, 1909, 26 and l.c. 1930, 77.

Morotai, Loc. 12, living plant n. 25, cult. in Hort. Bog. sub *n. 140*.

Distribution: Celebes, Philippines (Luzon), Moluccas (Morotai, Ternate, Tidore).

Didymoplexis minor J. J. Smith, Bull. Inst. Bot. Buit. 7, 1900, 1.

Var. **salmonea** J. J. Smith, Bull. Jard. bot. Buit., Sér. III, 11, 1930, 68.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, Pasir Malap, old forest along K. Bahewa, alt. 50 m, May 13: *n. 2994* (terrestrial, saprophytic) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 22: *n. 3112* (saprophytic).

Distribution of the variety: endemic; of the species: Java, Talaud, Ambon.

Epipogum roseum (D. Don.) Lindl., Journ. Linn. Soc. 1, 1857, 177; J. J. Smith, l.c. 1930, 68.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, in forest on flat riverbank, alt. 50 m, May 1: *n. 2711* (terrestrial, saprophytic, entire plant white); old forest on slope, alt. 50 m, May 4: *n. 2838* (same annotations, lip of flower with some violet spots).

Distribution: paleotropic except in Polynesia.

Eria oligotricha Schlecht. & Laut., Nachtr. Fl. D. Schutzgeb. Südsee, 1905, 181; J. J. Smith, l.c. 1930, 75.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 50 m, May 11: *n. 2949* (epiphytic, flow. dirty yellow).

Distribution: Talaud, Boeroe, New Guinea.

Eulophia squalida Lindl., Bot. Reg. 27, 1841, 77; J. J. Smith, l.c. 1930, 80.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest on steep slope, 80 m alt., May 5: *n. 2842* (terrestrial, lvs. l. green, peduncle and bracts very light, flow. greenish white and dirty violet, column with white tip; nat. n.: **sasáwa'a*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, sec. forest, alt. 150 m, May 20: *n. 3063* (flow. dirty green-pink) — Kaboeroeang, Loc. 5, sec. forest, alt. 100 m, May 27: *n. 3208* (sepals l. green, petals white, lip dirty pink).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas.

Eulophia venosa (F. v. Muell.) Reichb. f., Fl. Austr. 6, 1873, 300; J. J. Smith, l.c. 1930, 80.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, east of Lobo, in alang-alang field, alt. 10 m, May 15: *n. 3027* (terrestrial, no lvs. extant, tuber white, stem l. green with greenish brown scales and l. green bracts, flow. white with violet stripes, lip green beneath, base of wings d. violet).

Distribution: Talaud, New Guinea, Australia.

Galeola Kuhlii (Reichb. f.) Reichb. f., Xen. Orch. 2, 1865, 78; J. J. Smith, l.c. 1930, 68.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 25: *n. 3172* (terrestrial, saprophytic, flow. l. yellow).

Distribution: India, Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Philippines, Talaud.

Microstylis latifolia (Sm.) J. J. Smith, Fl. Buitenz. 6, 1905, 248, atl. fig. 185 and l.c. 1930, 70.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 260 m, May 22: *n. 3119* (terrestrial, lvs. and fr. l. green).

Distribution: India to Philippines and Australia.

Microstylis purpureo-viridis J. J. Smith, l.c. 1930, 70.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, on rocks in side of ravine, cleared forest, alt. 40 m, April 25: *n. 2569* (flow. l. green) — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, in low forest, alt. 350 m, May 31: *n. 3239* (fr. violet).

Distribution: endemic.

Remarks: Closely related to some species from New Guinea (cf. Smith, l. c.). The species is abundant in all Talaud Islands, but n. 3239 was the only specimen found in flower at the time.

Microstylis talaudensis J. J. Smith, l.c. 1930, 71.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, border of recent landslide, alt. 50 m, May 11: *n. 2961* (terrestrial, flow. buds violet); Pasir Malap, in old forest on river-bank, alt. 20 m, May 15: *n. 3000* — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, cleared old forest, alt. 150 m, May 20: *n. 3065.*

Distribution: endemic.

Remark: Dr. Smith informs us that the nearest allies are *M. klabatensis* Schlecht. from N. Celebes and *M. seranensis* J. J. S. from Ceram.

Microstylis trigonopetala J. J. Smith, Nat. Tijdschr. N. I. 58, 1898, 358, pl. 4, fig. 1—3 and l.c. 1930, 69.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, old forest, alt. 100 m, June 3: *n. 3339* (terrestrial, lvs., peduncle and bracts l. green, flow. l. yellow, column black at tip, ovary l. green) — Salebaboe, Loc. 2, G. Ajambana, cleared old forest, alt. 340 m, May 20: *n. 3066* (same annotations

as n. 3339, but lip orange-yellow); alt. 260 m, May 23: *n. 3151* (same annotations as preceding nrs.).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud.

Peristylus papuanus (Kraenzl.) J. J. Smith, Nova Guinea XII, 1913, 3 and l.c. 1930, 67.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 160 m, May 2: *n. 2746* (terrestrial).

Distribution: Talaud, Ceram, Ambon, New Guinea.

Podochilus Lamii J. J. Smith, l.c. 1930, 72.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 40 m, June 20: *n. 3486* (epiphytic; nat. n.: *lolomíti*).

Distribution: endemic.

Remark: Closely related to *P. obovatipetalus* J. J. S. from Borneo.

Polystachya flavescens (Bl.) J. J. Smith, Fl. Buitenz. 6, 1905, 284, atl. fig. 218 and l.c. 1930, 73.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, alt. 400 m, June 3: *n. 3338* (epiphytic, lvs. dull green, fr. green).

Distribution: pantropic.

Spathoglottis plicata Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 401, Tab. fig. 76; J. J. Smith, l.c. 1930, 73.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 50 m, April 24: *n. 2543* (flow. lilac; nat. n.: *sa'ansáwa*) — Loc. 7, open sunny slope under shrubs, alt. 350 m, May 31: *n. 3251* (nat. n.: **sasáwa'a*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, along rivulet in cleared forest, alt. 200 m, May 22: *n. 3109* (nat. n.: **sasawá'an'a*) — Miangas, Loc. 9, in coconut plantation, alt. 5 m, June 12: *n. 3400.*

Distribution: Malay Peninsula to Formosa and Carolines.

Thelasis micrantha (Brongn.) J. J. Smith, Fl. Buitenz. 6, 1905, 495, atl. fig. 374 and l.c. 1930, 80.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 50 m, May 4: *n. 2831* (epiphytic, peduncle and flow. buds l. brown).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Philippines, Talaud.

Dicotyledoneae

PIPERACEAE

Piper abbreviatum Opiz in Presl, Rel. Haenk. 1, 1828, 157.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, cleared sec. forest, alt. 100 m, very frequent, April 26: *n. 2609* (climbing, several m long, lvs. bright green, nodes brownish, infl. l. green, yellow with age; nat. n.: *daràmang'kahoerángan'a*); cleared old forest, alt. 100 m, frequent, April 26: *n. 2610* (same annotations and nat. n.) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, old forest, alt. 300 m, May 23: *n. 3150* (climbing, lvs. d. green above, paler below, ovary l. yellow, fr. l. green) — Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, sec. forest, May 26: *n. 3198* (same annotations as n. 2609; nat. n.: *láling oe àsoe*).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Bali, Borneo, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud.

Piper amboinense (Miq.) C. DC., Prodr. 16, pt. 1, 1869, 347.

Morotai, Loc. 12, G. Ligòjer, old forest, alt. 50 m, June 27: *n. 3630* (climbing, several m long, lvs. d. green, paler below, nerves red when young, anthers l. yellow, ovary d. green; nat. n.: *táli*).

Distribution: N. Borneo, Celebes, Moluccas (Morotai, Ternate, Batjan, Boeroe, Ceram, Ambon), New Guinea.

Piper sarmentosum Roxb., Fl. Ind., ed. I, 1, 1820, 162.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, wayside, alt. 5 m, April 23: *n. 2498* (herb, many together, lvs. d. green, infl. white; nat. n.: *rimboàs'a*).

Distribution: India and S. China, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas (Ternate, Ceram).

Piper villilimbum C. DC., Leafl. Philip. Bot. 3, 1910, 788 — *Piper Boerlagei* C. DC., Candollea 1, 1923, 226.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 120 m, June 22: *n. 3555* (climbing, lvs. d. green above, paler below, fr. greenish brown).

Distribution: Philippines, Morotai, Ambon.

Remarks: *Piper villilimbum* and *Piper Boerlagei* cannot be considered specifically distinct. According to De Candolle, *P. villilimbum* should differ from *P. Boerlagei* by having the peduncles about as long as the petioles, whereas in the latter species they should be much longer than the petioles. In the specimens of both species at my disposal, including the type specimens, all peduncles are longer than the petioles, except in a specimen of *P. villilimbum,* in which the inflorescences were very young.

FAGACEAE

Castanopsis javanica (Bl.) A. DC., Journ. Bot. 1, 1863, 182.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, 50 m alt., frequent, June 22: *n. 3536* (tree, 20 m; nat. n.: *hileh*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Palawan, Mindanao, Morotai.

ULMACEAE

Celtis latifolia (Bl.) Planch. in DC., Prodr. 17, 1873, 186.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, frequent in old forest, 20 m alt., June 28: *n. 3635* (tree, 17 m, fr. green; nat. n.: *hóro*).

Distribution: Moluccas, New Guinea.

Gironniera celtidifolia Gaud., Bot. Freyc. Voy., 1844, t. 85.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, 60 m alt., June 20: *n. 3466* (small tree, fr. green; nat. n.: *kòko*); G. Ligòjer, alt. 120 m, June 24: *n. 3586* (tree, 8 m, fr. l. green; same nat. n.).

Distribution: Philippines to Micronesia, Fiji and Samoa.

Trema amboinensis (Willd.) Bl., Mus. Bot. Lugd.-Bat. 2, 1856, 61.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, 60 m alt., April 24: *n. 2530* (tree, 4 m, fr. green; nat. n.: *mandalíroeng'a*; decoction of leaves used as a laxative) — Loc. 8, on native field, 10 m alt., June 3: *n. 3331* (same annotations and nat. n.).

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, in cleared grounds, 20 m alt., June 29: *n. 3673* (shrub, 3 m, fr. greenish white).

Distribution: S.E. Asia to Carolines.

MORACEAE

Artocarpus communis Forst., Char. Gen., 1776, 101.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, frequent in old forest, alt. 250 m, May 8: *n. 2895* (tree, 17 m, latex abundant and sticky, used for catching birds; nat. n.: *tipóéroe*).

Distribution: Polynesia, New Guinea, Talaud, introduced and cultivated elsewhere. According to Merrill it is probably introduced in the Philippines. Both in New Guinea and in Talaud it is undoubtedly wild.

Artocarpus elastica Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 481.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, frequent in old forest, alt. 100 m, May 5: *n. 2845* (tree, 31 m, diam. 0.50 m, straight, buttresses small, latex copious, sticky; wood demanded for house construction; nat. n.: *awá'a*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula to Philippines and Moluccas.

Artocarpus reticulata Miq., Ann. Mus. Bot. Lugd.-Bat. 3, 1867, 213.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, old forest, alt. 100 m, April 26: *n. 2626* (tree, 12 m, latex white; nat. n.: *lingka oewing'a*).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud, Moluccas.

Conocephalus suaveolens Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 483.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Goegoeti, frequent on riverbank, 40 m alt., April 26: *n. 3620* (liana, 20 m long, infl. lilac; nat. n.: *dongòta*).

Distribution: India and Malaysia.

Fatoua pilosa Gaud., Bot. Freyc. Voy., 1826, 509.

Karakelong, Loc. 8, wayside, June 4: *n. 3343* (small shrub, petioles reddish, calyx l. green, stamens and style white, fr. l. green; decoction of roots used against enteric diseases; nat. n.: *áloe'mparánoh*) — Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, waysides, May 26: *n. 3195* (undershrub, stem l. brown, lvs. bright green, l. green below, petioles brownish green, calyx l. green, corolla white, style greenish white; nat. n.: *maróéloem'a*).

Distribution: S.E. Asia and Malaysia.

Ficus ampelas Burm. f., Fl. Ind., 1768, 226.

Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, sec. forest, May 26: *n. 3186* (tree, 4 m; nat. n.: *asimbóéroeng'a*) — Loc. 5, sec. forest, alt. 150 m, May 27: *n. 3202* (tree, 8 m, figs red; nat. n.: *asimbóéroeng'a*).

Distribution: Sumatra to Moluccas and Timor.

Ficus botryocarpa Miq., Ann. Mus. Bot. Lugd.-Bat. 3, 1867, 233.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 80 m, April 24: *n. 2528* (tree, 6 m, figs greenish brown on drooping branches inserted on trunk; nat. n.: *nóhnah*) — Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 40—50 m, May 3—4: *n. 2767, 2814* (both trees 10—13 m, same nat. n.).

Distribution: Talaud, Celebes.

Ficus Cassidyana Elm., Leafl. Phil. Bot. 1, 1906, 200.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, fairly frequent in old forest, 20 m alt., June 28: *n. 3649* (tree, 10 m, figs green; nat. n.: *gòjen*).

Distribution: Philippines, Morotai.

Ficus celebica Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 461.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 80 m, April 24: *n. 2538* (tree, 5 m, figs yellowish red; nat. n.: *atántas'a*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, New Guinea.

Ficus falcata Thunb., Ficus, 1786, 8.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 100 m, very frequent, June 22: *n. 3547* (climbing).

Distribution: Ceylon to Philippines and Moluccas.

Ficus heteropoda Miq., Ann. Mus. Bot. Lugd.-Bat. 3, 1867, 232.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, old forest, alt. 40 m, April 25: *n. 2531* (tree, 10 m, lvs. very rough, used for polishing ebony, figs almost white; nat. n.: *pàdeh*).

Distribution: Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Halmahera.

Ficus ?kallicarpa Miq., Ann. Mus. Bot. Lugd.-Bat. 3, 1867, 268, t. 10 fig. A.

Miangas, Loc. 9, alt. 40 m, June 11: *n. 3353* (tree, 6 m, figs l. green; nat. n.: *péleh*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Borneo, Celebes, Miangas.

Ficus ?lanata Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 441.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 70 m, May 5: *n. 2843* (climbing, figs orange-coloured; nat. n.: *lingka oewing'a*).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Talaud.

Ficus leucantatoma Poir., Enc. Bot., Suppl. 2, 1813, 654.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 50 m, April 24: *n. 2532* (tree, 6 m, nerves white, figs l. green; nat. n.: *boeàs'a*) — Miangas, Loc. 9, behind the beach: *n. 3407* (nat. n.: *póéwah*).

Distribution: S. China and Malay Peninsula to Celebes, Moluccas and Timor. Probably conspecific with *F. hauili* Blanco from the Philippines.

Ficus Minahassae (Teysm. & De Vr.) Miq., Ann. Mus. Bot. Lugd.-Bat. 3, 1867, 231, 296.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, very frequent in old forest on riverbank, alt. 50 m, May 1: *n. 2733* (tree, 21 m high, bole 7.6 m, straight, cylindrical, d. brown, diam. 0.4—0.2 m, lvs. d. green above, l. green below, petioles and nerves l. green, figs clustered along ± 5 m long leafless branches, which hang down from the trunk, those which sprout forth from the base of the trunk, lie down in great masses on the ground, these branches red when young, turning reddish brown with yellow lenticels, milky juice abundant, sticky when drying up, precipitating at the chopping wounds, from which only the water is trickling down; nat. n.: *rinit'a*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, frequent in sec. forest, north of G. Ajambana, alt. 200 m, May 24: *n. 3157* (fig carrying branches with some reduced leaves; nat. n.: *rinit'a*).

Distribution: N. Celebes, Talaud, Philippines.

Ficus procera Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 445.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, beach, April 23: *n. 2488* (large tree with low drooping branches, figs greenish yellow; nat. n.: *nóénoe'a*) — Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 150 m, May 11: *n. 2941* (tree, 45 m, diam. 1.40 m, buttresses very large, trunk furrowed, latex copious; same nat. n.).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Talaud, Moluccas (Obi).

Ficus pubinervis Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 452.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, old forest, alt. 100 m, April 26: *n. 2627* (tree, 11 m, figs l. green; nat. n.: *lariasàn'oe *pani'i*).

Distribution: Japan, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Timor.

Ficus recurva Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 457.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 8: *n. 2907* (liana, figs dull d. red, latex little, nat. n.: *larímoe oerán'a*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Philippines (Palawan, Leyte), Talaud, Moluccas (Ternate).

Ficus retusa L., Mant. 1, 1787, 129.

Miangas, Loc. 9, frequent in small grove, alt. 90 m, June 11: *n. 3384* (tree, 10 m, figs l. green; nat. n.: *panambóéri*).

Distribution: India and S. China to Australia.

Ficus rudis Miq., Ann. Mus. Bot. Lugd.-Bat. 2, 1865—1866, 222, 291.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, in cleared forest, alt. 40 m, April 25: *n. 2585* (tree, 15 m, figs l. green, nat. n.: *ambíra*).

Distribution: Celebes, Philippines (Mindanao, Negros), Talaud, Moluccas (Ceram, Ambon, Banda).

Ficus subulata Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 461.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, on riverbank in old forest, alt. 50 m, May 3: *n. 2782* (tree, 7 m, figs l. greenish yellow; nat. n.: *pàdeh *ahoerángan*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, frequent in sec. forest, alt. 50 m, May 21: *n. 3071* (tree, 12 m, figs bright yellow; nat. n.: *pèlèta*).

Distribution: India and S. China to Formosa, Philippines, Moluccas and New Guinea.

Ficus variegata Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 459.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, fairly frequent in old forest, alt. 200 m, May 10: *n. 2922* (tree, 30 m, diam. 0.70 m; nat. n.: *bintas'a*).

Distribution: S. China and Malay Peninsula to Philippines, Moluccas and Soemba.

Vanieria cochinchinensis Lour., Fl. For. Cochinch., 1790, 565.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 150 m, May 11: *n. 2950* (long liana; nat .n.: *poendáneh*).

Distribution: E. Africa to Australia.

URTICACEAE

Boehmeria clidemoides Miq., Pl. Jungh., 1851—'55, 34.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, steep bank of K. Tatamboewe, alt. 40 m, May 3: *n. 2765* (shrub, some m high, lvs. bright green, paler below, nerves still paler, infl. l. green; nat. n.: *sòsop*).

Distribution: S. China, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Talaud, Moluccas (Tidore).

Elatostema polioneurum Hall. f., Fedde's Repert. 2, 1906, 62; Schröter & Hub. Winkler, Fedde's Repert. Suppl. 83, 1935, 106.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, shady ravine in sec. forest, alt. 60 m, April 24: *n. 2553* (herb, 1.5 m high, lvs. d. green above, lighter beneath, flow. dirty white; nat. n.: *babíseh*); Loc. 2, bank of K. Bahewa, alt. 30 m, May 12: *n. 2965* (same annotations and nat. n.; flow. pink) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, alt. 150 m, May 20: *n. 3056* (stems and petioles reddish, infl. very l. pink).

Distribution: N. Celebes, Talaud, Ambon.

Laportea amplissima Miq., Fl. Ind. Bat., pt. 2, 1855—'59, 232.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Goegoeti, on riverbank, alt. 40 m, June 26: *n. 3628* (tree, ± 4 m high, lvs. dull d. green above, bright green below, midrib l. green, petioles green, infl. l. green, slightly violet; nat. n.: *tatáoen*).

Distribution: Java, Bali, Celebes, Moluccas (Morotai, Halmahera, Ternate, Boeroe, Ceram, Ambon).

Leucosyke capitellata (Poir.) Wedd. in DC., Prodr. 16, 1869, 235.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, 10 m alt., April 23: *n. 2501* (large shrub, 4 m; nat. n.: *barabíran'a*); wayside, 100 m alt., April 26: *n. 2608* (lvs. white underneath; same nat. n.) — Loc. 2, old forest, 250 m alt., frequent: *n. 2904* (tree, 13 m; same nat. n.; bast used for making ropes).

Distribution: Formosa and Java to New Guinea.

Maoutia Puya Wedd., Arch. Mus. Hist. Nat. Par. 9, 1856—1857, 477, t. 16B.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, steep riverbank, alt. 50 m, May 3: *n. 2763* (shrub, infl. very l. green; nat. n.: *sòsop*).

Distribution: India to Celebes, Moluccas and Timor.

Pipturus argenteus (Forst. f.) Wedd. in DC., Prodr. 16, 1869, 235.

Miangas, Loc. 9, behind the beach, alt. 2 m, June 12: *n. 3404* (shrub, ± 1 m high, lvs. bright green, l. green below, infl. l. green; nat. n.: *dendómeh*).

Distribution: Sumatra, Borneo and Philippines to Polynesia.

Pipturus incanus (Bl.) Wedd., in DC., Prodr. 16, 1869, 235.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, bank of K. Tatamboewe, old forest, alt. 50 m, May 3: *n. 2783* (tree, ± 9 m high, lvs. d. green above, l. green below, infl. l. green, fr. fleshy, white; nat. n.: *sòsop *ahoerángan*).

Distribution: Sumatra to Polynesia.

Pipturus velutinus Wedd., Ann. Sci. Nat. Bot., Sér. IV, 1, 1854, 196.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Goegoeti, cleared grounds along river, alt. 40 m, June 25: *n. 3610* (tree, ± 6 m high, lvs. d. green above, very l. green below, petioles l. green, style white, fr. fleshy, white, green when young; nat. n.: *libériën*).

Distribution: Mascarenes to Polynesia.

Pouzolzia zeylanica (L.) Benn., Pl. Jav. Rar., 1838, 67.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, southwest of Liroeng, sec. forest, alt. 100 m,

May 20: *n. 3050* (herb, lvs. bright green, paler below, petioles and stem slightly reddish, fr. l. green, red when young); same locality and date: *n. 3051* (same annotations as n. 3050, infl. l. green, no fr.).

Distribution: India to Philippines, Micronesia, New Guinea and Australia.

Pseudopipturus repandus (Bl.) Skottsb., Meddel. Göteb. Bot. Trädg. VIII, 1933, 117 — *Pipturus repandus* (Bl.) Wedd., Arch. Mus. Par. 9, 1856, 448.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, cleared forest, alt. 40 m, April 25: *n. 2583* (climbing, lvs. bright green, nerves red below, infl. l. green).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas (Ternate, Boeroe, Ceram, Ambon, Banda), New Ireland, Micronesia.

Villebrunea rubescens (Bl.) Bl., Mus. Bot. Lugd.-Bat. 2, 1856, 167.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest on riverbank, alt. 50 m, May 1: *n. 2720* (tree, 10 m high, bole 4 m, diam. 0.14—0.12 m, lvs. d. green, paler below, petioles brown, infl. very l. yellow; nat. n.: *ambíra*); same locality, May 3: *n. 2810* (small curved tree, ± 5 m high, branchlets brown, fr. green, fleshy white; nat. n.: *boeralá'a*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, south of Liroeng, cleared old forest, alt. 100 m, May 21: *n. 3077* (small tree, ± 8 m high, perianth whitish green, filaments white, anthers brownish white).

Distribution: Java, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas.

LORANTHACEAE (B. H. Danser)

Amyema celebica (Van Tiegh.) Dans., Bull. Jard. bot. Buit., Sér. III, 10, 1929, 294 and 11, 1931, 328, fig. 9, o—p.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, forest along wayside, alt. 120 m, April 27: *n. 2648* (lvs. bright green, calyx and pedicels l. green, corolla red, the upper one third greenish yellow; nat. n.: **araràn'a*) — Loc. 2, in old forest, alt. 100 m, April 30: *n. 2692* (same annotations and nat. n. as n. 2648) — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, alt. 400 m, May 31: *n. 3253* (same annotations and nat. n., fr. greenish white, branchlets grey).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud, Philippines (Negros, Mindanao).

Amyema rigidiflora (Krause) Dans., l.c. 10, 1929, 298 and 11, 1931, 344, fig. 12, d—f.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 8: *n. 2908* (lvs. coriaceous, calyx and pedicels l. green, corolla orange-coloured, the tips of the petals yellowish green, fr. green with a red apex; nat. n.: **araràn'a késat'a*).

Distribution: Talaud, New Guinea.

Amylotheca stenopetala (Oliv.) Dans., l.c. 10, 1929, 302 and 11, 1931, 248, fig. 1, e—f.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 50 m, May 4: *n. 2815* (lvs. coriaceous, calyx l. green, corolla orange-coloured at base, yellowish green in the middle, tips d. red, fr. green).

Distribution: Flores, Salajar, Celebes, Talaud.

Dicymanthes hexameres Dans., l.c. 11, 1931, 364, fig. 16, h—k.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Goegoeti, on riverbank, alt. 40 m, June 26: *n. 3621* (on *Eugenia ? acutangula*, n. 3616, calyx l. green, corolla tube bright red,

petals white, tips green, stamens and style red, stigma dirty yellow).

Distribution: endemic; the area of the genus is Philippines, Celebes, Moluccas, Lesser Sunda Islands, East-Java. The centre is in the Philippines.

Ginalloa Arnottiana Korth., Verh. Batav. Gen. 17, 1839, 260; Danser, l.c. 11, 1931, 449, fig. 24b.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, in cleared old forest, alt. 60 m, April 25: *n. 2562* (lvs. d. green, fr. green); cleared old forest, alt. 100 m, April 26: *n. 2613* (infl. l. green) — Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 170 m, May 7: *n. 2887* (fr. fleshy, salmon coloured, infl. l. green) — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, low forest on summit, alt. 500 m, June 1: *n. 3290* (infl. yellowish green).

Distribution: Borneo, Philippines (Luzon, Polillo, Negros), Talaud, Soelabesi, Lombok. The genus occurs from Burma and Indo China to the Philippines and the Moluccas.

Scurrula fusca (Bl.) G. Don, Gen. Hist. 3, 1834, 421; Danser, l.c. 11, 1931, 434.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, open sec. forest, alt. 20 m, April 25: *n. 2563* (on *Commersonia Bartramia* Merr., branchlets brown, lvs. l. green, young ones brown pubescent as is the flower, filaments and style d. red, anthers and stigma yellowish red; nat. n.: **ararân'a*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, in sec. forest, alt. 220 m, May 23: *n. 3138* (branchlets greyish brown, flow. greenish yellowish brown, filaments d. red, anthers pink, style and stigma red, ovary l. green; nat. n.: **ararân'a*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula to Philippines, Talaud and Moluccas (Boeroe).

OPILIACEAE

Champereia manillana (Bl.) Merr., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 7, 1912, 233.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, sec. forest, alt. 150 m, frequent, May 24: *n. 3162* (tree, 11 m high; nat. n.: **amaloeân'a*) — Nenoesa, Loc. 10, Merampi, sec. forest on limestone, alt. 100 m, June 13: *n. 3419* (flow. green; nat. n.: *aramáloe*).

Distribution: Burma to Philippines, Moluccas and Timor.

OLACACEAE

Erythropalum scandens Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 921.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 50 m, May 3: *n. 2806* (liana, 20 m, fr. red).

Distribution: S.E. Asia, Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Philippines, Talaud.

Strombosia philippinensis (Baill.) Rolfe, Journ. Bot. 23, 1885, 211.

Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, cleared old forest, alt. 75 m, very frequent, May 26: *n. 3175* (tree, 21 m, flow. l. green; nat. n.: *la'abóéoe*).

Distribution: Philippines, Talaud.

Ximenia americana L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 1193.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, behind the beach, April 23: *n. 2508* (flow. greenish yellow; nat. n.: **marimbòs'a*).

Distribution: pantropic.

POLYGONACEAE (B. H. Danser)

Polygonum minus Huds., Fl. Angl., 1762, 148.

Subspec. **procerum** Dans., Bull. Jard. bot. Buit., Sér. III, 8, 1926, 176.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, Danon Timbalang'a, bank of small lake, alt. 250 m, May 24: *n. 3159* (herb, growing consociately, lvs. pretty d. green above, l. green below, midrib paler, flow. white with l. green base; nat. n.: *bángoen'a*) — Loc. 6, Lota swamp, alt. 5 m, May 28: *n. 3216* (herb, stem prostrate, rooting, lower ochreae brown, flow. white).

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, along river bank, alt. 20 m, June 28: *n. 3648* (herb, stem partly prostrate, further annotations as in preceding nrs.).

Distribution of the species: Europe, temperate and tropical Asia to Marianas, New Zealand and Australia; of the subspecies: Borneo, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea, New Ireland, Marianas.

AMARANTACEAE

Achyranthes aspera L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 204.

Nenoesa, Loc. 10, Merampi, near Dampoelis, in coconut plantation, alt. 3 m, June 13: *n. 3432* (herb, lvs. l. green, infl. l. green).

Distribution: pantropic.

Deeringia polysperma (Roxb.) Moq. in DC., Prodr. 13, 1849, 236.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, bank of K. Bahewa, alt. 40 m, May 4: *n. 2837* (undershrub, lvs. bright green, stem brownish green, calyx l. green, stigma greenish white, fr. green) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, skirt of forest, alt. 200 m, May 20: *n. 3052* (shrub, lvs. dull green, calyx greenish white, ovary green, fr. green when young, white when ripe; nat. n.: **tengtaramiseán wawíne*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula to Philippines and New Guinea.

NYCTAGINACEAE

Pisonia sylvestris Teysm. & Binn., Nat. Tijdschr. Ned.-Ind. 9, 1855, 349, 355.

Salebaboe, Loc. 6, beach, May 28: *n. 3228* (small tree; nat. n.: *boerán'a*).

Distribution: Java, Bali, Kangean, Talaud, Moluccas.

Pisonia umbellifera (Forst.) Seem., Bonplandia 10, 1862, 154.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 60 m, April 24: *n. 2537* (from base strongly branched tree, 8 m, flow. l. yellowish green, extremely many along branches and stems; nat. n.: *noríng'a*) — Loc. 2, Pasir Malap, old forest on riverbank, alt. 20 m, May 14: *n. 3004* (tree, 7 m).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula and Formosa to Polynesia and Australia.

AIZOACEAE

Mollugo pentaphylla L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 89.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, ladang, alt. 150 m, May 21: *n. 3083* (herb, stems more or less prostrate, lvs. and stems bright green, calyx green, corolla white).

Distribution: India to Japan, Philippines, New Guinea and Micronesia.

RANUNCULACEAE

Clematis aristata R. Br., Bot. Reg., 1815—'24, t. 238.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 60 m, April 24: *n. 2540*

(twining, several m long, lvs. l. green, flow. l. greenish yellow, anthers l. yellow, with white tip; the stems are wound around the waist against lumbago; nat. n.: *larâteh*); skirt of sec. forest, alt. 5 m, April 28: *n. 2677* (entire plant pale green, lvs. slightly darker above than below, fr. very l. green, styles in the ripe fruit feather-shaped, almost white; nat. n.: *naówi*).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud, Moluccas (Boeroe, Ceram, Ambon), Lesser Sunda Islands (Soemba, Timor), New Guinea, Australia, Tasmania, New Zealand, New Caledonia and Fiji.

MENISPERMACEAE

Arcangelisia flava (L.) Merr., Interpret. Herb. Amb., 1917, 222.

Kaboeroeang, Loc. 5, skirt of old forest, alt. 100 m, May 27: *n. 3203* (liana, several m long, stem contains a yellow liquid, lvs. d. green shining above, dull and paler below, petioles green, infl. l. green).

Distribution: Java, Borneo, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas (Halmahera, Batjan, Ambon), New Guinea.

Pericampylus glaucus (Lam.) Merr., Interpret. Herb. Amb., 1917, 219.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 80 m, April 24: *n. 2541* (twining, several m long, lvs. bluish green, paler below, calyx l. brownish green, corolla l. green, filaments l. greenish yellow, anthers l. brown, stigma d. violet, ovary l. green, fr. dull green when young, turning wine red, black when ripe; nat. n.: *talimbá'as*).

Distribution: India to Philippines and New Guinea.

Stephania cauliflora Becc., Malesia I, 1877, 155.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 100 m, April 27: *n. 2646* (twining, many m long; nat. n.: *talimbá'as'a*).

Distribution: Talaud, Celebes.

Stephania hernandiifolia (Willd.) Walp., Rep. 1, 1842, 96.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, behind the beach, April 23: *n. 2490* (flow. yellowish green) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, wayside, alt. 2 m, May 5: *n. 3096* (twining, some m long, fr. orange-coloured; nat. n.: **ánoe'óése'a*).

Distribution: India and S. China to Australia (not known from the Philippines).

MAGNOLIACEAE

Elmerrillia ovalis (Miq.) Dandy, Kew Bull. 1927, 261.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 320 m, May 23: *n. 3121* (tree, 13 m high, bole 5.5 m, diam. 0.35—0.33 m, trunk straight, cylindrical, l. greyish brown, lvs. bright green, twigs bright green; used for house and proa construction; nat. n.: *pongóéan'a*).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud.

ANNONACEAE

Artabotrys macrantha Holth., nov. spec., *Fig. 3* (p. 182).

Frutex scandens, rami novelli tomentosi, ramuli folia et flores gerentes curvati, longiusculi, apice hamosi. *Folia* oblonga, glabra, chartacea, 10—26 × 6—10 cm, apice obtusa, breviter acuminata, basi lata, subabrupte

acute contracta. *Flores* pro genere magni, circiter 5 cm longi, apice unci praeter hami angulum ramulum foliosum gerentem inserti; *sepala* 3, apice acuta, triangularia, extus pubescentia, intus tomentosa; *petala* 6 biseriata, 3 externa longiora, interna breviora, omnia flava, utrinque pubescentia, basi extus villosa, intus glabra. *Stamina* multa, parva, antherae quam filamenta triplo longiores. *Carpella* 8, stylo curvato et ovario glabro aequilongis. *Fructus* ignoti.

A *liana,* climbing to a height of about 20 m. Branches glabrous but for the younger parts, which are densely tawny pubescent, lenticels little conspicuous; lateral branches curved, bearing the leaves and the flowers, 9—13 cm long and 0.3—0.4 cm thick, ferruginously pubescent when young, ending by a flat hook, which is broadened at the angles, the first angle bearing the leafed branchlets, the second angle and the end of the hook the flowers; the leafed branchlets often pubescent, up to 10 cm long, with 3 or 4 *leaves,* which are alternate, bright green, glabrous, the young ones reddish brown when dry, densely covered with long ferruginous hairs, especially on the midrib and the nerves, soon glabrate, oblong, 10—26 cm long and 6—10 cm broad, rigidly chartaceous, apex shortly and bluntly acuminate, base broad, abruptly narrowed into the petiole, margins entire, midrib little prominent on either side, secondary nerves 8—9, ascending at an angle of about 50°; petioles short and stout, about 1 cm long and 0.4 cm thick, glabrous or pubescent, brownish with age. *Flowers* large for the genus, about 5 cm long, with a soapy odour, pedicels about 1.4 cm long and 0.2 cm thick, ferruginously pubescent; *sepals* 3, 1.2 cm long and 1 cm broad, triangular, with a rather acute apex, ferruginously pubescent outside, tomentose inside; *petals* 6 in two whorls, the outer ones longer, 3.5—4 cm long and about 2 cm broad, greenish yellow when young, bright pale yellow when adult, dark reddish brown in a dry state, densely covered with yellow hairs on either side, the base more densely pubescent than the rest of the petal without, glabrous within. *Stamens* numerous, inserted on a short broad axis of about 0.1 cm high, filaments 0.05 cm long, anthers 0.15 cm, pale yellow. *Carpels* 8, each surrounded by a ring of erect hairs, about 0.3 cm long, the style dirty white, curved, about as long and almost as thick as the glabrous carpel. *Fruits* unknown.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, Pasir Malap, old forest on riverbank, alt. 20 m, May 14: *n. 3003* (bast used as medicine for wounds; *type specimen,* L., dupl. Bz., nat. n.: *pòtòdára*).

Remarks: The present species is distinguished by the long curved branchlets and the large flowers. The genus is recorded from India to the Philippines and the Moluccas.

Canangium odoratum (Lam.) Baill., Journ. As. Soc. Beng. 61, 1892, 41.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, steep slope, alt. 200 m, May 6: *n. 2857* (large tree, 48 m high, bole 28 m, diam. 0.55—0.39 m, trunk straight, cylindrical, pale greyish brown, lvs. shining, d. green, lower surface and nerves paler, calyx and pedicels l. green, corolla l. yellow, anthers yellow, ovary d. green, flow. fragrant; nat. n.: *lalangíran'a*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 22: *n. 3104* (tree, 28 m high, bole 20 m, diam. 0.30—0.20 m, same annotations as n. 2857, but corolla yellowish green, anthers l. green, fr. d. green; nat. n.: *larangíran'a*).

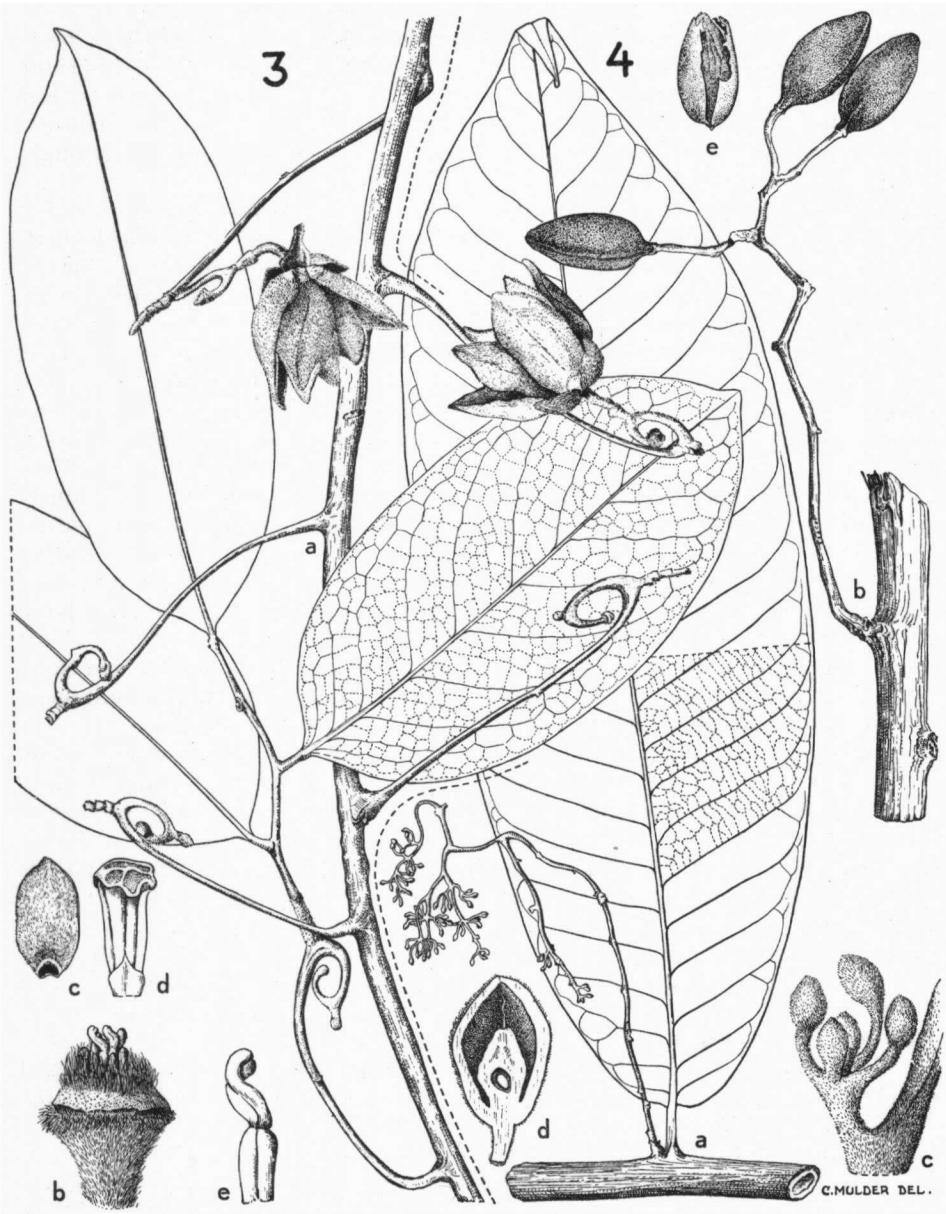


Fig. 3 — *Artabotrys macrantha* Holth., n. sp. — a. flowering branchlet; b. gynaeceum; c. petal, inside; d. stamen; e. carpel and style (after the *type specimen*).

Fig. 4 — *Gymnacranthera Ibutii* Holth., n. sp. — a. flowering branchlet; b. infrutescence; c. partial inflorescence with buds; d. female flower, longitudinal section; e. seed with arillus (after the *type specimen*).

Distribution: According to Merrill (Enum. Phil. Flow. Pl. 2, 1923, 158) this species is a native of Birma and Java and is introduced in many other tropical countries. The specimens from Karakelong and Salebaboe are undoubtedly wild.

Cyathocalyx ?acuminatus C. B. Rob., Bull. Torr. Bot. Club 35, 1908, 66, 74.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 70 m, May 2: *n. 2738* (tree, 15 m, flow. yellowish green, fr. green; nat. n.: *maniáoh*); old forest, alt. 180 m, May 10: *n. 2926* (tree, 18 m, same annotations; nat. n.: *atóéwoet'a*).

Distribution: Mindanao, Talaud.

Polyalthia celebica Miq., Ann. Mus. Bot. Lugd.-Bat. 2, 1865—1866, 14.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 70 m, May 4: *n. 2820* (tree, 11 m; nat. n.: *amiséan'a *batoe*).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud.

Polyalthia lateriflora (Bl.) Kurz, Journ. As. Soc. Beng. 43, pt. 2, 1874, 52.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 180 m, June 23: *n. 3565* (tree, 30 m, fr. orange-yellow; nat. n.: *harároko*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Morotai.

Uvaria purpurea Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 11.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, June 20: *n. 3481* (liana, fr. l. yellow).

Distribution: S. China and Malay Peninsula to Lesser Sunda Islands, Moluccas and Philippines.

MYRISTICACEAE

Gymnacranthera Ibutii [1]) Holth., nov. spec., *Fig. 4* (p. 182).

Arbor mediocris. *Folia* chartacea, glabra, oblonga, 25—40 × 8—15 cm, apice acuto-acuminata, basi rotundata; petioli 1.5—2 cm longi. *Inflorescentiae femineae* late paniculatae usque ad 12 cm longae, multiflorae, ferrugineo-pubescentes, ebracteatae. *Alabastra* ovoidea, 0.2 cm longa, pedicellis circiter aequilongi, perigono 3-lobo, tepalis obtusis. *Fructus* elongato-ovoidei circiter 4 × 2 cm, arillus apice tantum laciniatus fulvus. Semina fusca. Planta masculina ignota.

Tree, about 17 m high, trunk cylindrical, brown with white spots, bole 11 m, diam. 0.24—0.09 m; branches dark brown, glabrous, longitudinally wrinkled when dry; lenticels minute. *Leaves* alternate, dark green above, pale green below, dark brown and pale reddish brown respectively when dry, oblong, chartaceous, glabrous, 25—40 cm long, 8—15 cm broad, the greatest breadth a little above the middle, apex acutely acuminate, base rounded, margins entire; midrib fairly prominent below, secondary nerves 20—24, slender, about straight, ascending at an angle of about 60°, faintly archingly joined near the margin, tertiary nerves only faintly conspicuous below; petioles 1.5 to 2 cm long and 0.3 cm in diameter. *Female inflorescences* paniculate, axillary, minutely ferruginously pubescent, glabrescent at base, up to 12 cm long, the ramifications 2—5 cm long, the peduncle 0.1 to 0.2 cm thick, bracts not extant. *Flower buds* ovoid, about 0.2 cm, the pedicels up to 0.3 cm long, the perigonium consisting of 3 blunt tepals, which are ferruginously pubescent without, glabrous within. Ovary ovate, hardly pointed, glabrous. *Infrutescences* with

[1]) Named in honour of Dr Lam's Sundanese attendant Iboet (cf. acknowledgement at the end of the General Part, p. 145).

about four fruits and up to 25 cm long, the peduncle 0.4 cm in diameter; pedicels 2 cm long and 0.2 cm thick. *Fruit* oblong-ovoid, green when young, turning yellow when ripe, glabrous, with a short gynophore; the apex blunt, about 3.5—4 × 1.5—2 cm; arillus laciniate at the top only, yellowish brown when dry, very minutely papillose; testa of seeds dark brown and shining, thin and cartilaginous; embryo very hard. Male plants unknown.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, Pasir Malap, old forest on bank of K. Bahewa, alt. 20 m, May 13: *n. 2976* (*type specimen*, L., dupl. Bz.; nat. n.: *polôtan'a*).

Remarks: This species is characterized by the large leaves, the long female inflorescences and the slightly laciniate arillus. The genus is known from southern India (1 species), Malay Peninsula (4 sp.), Sumatra (1 sp.), N. Borneo (4 sp.), Philippines (4 sp.) and New Guinea (1 sp.).

Horsfieldia glabra (Bl.) Warb., Nov. Act. Akad. Naturf. 68, 1897, 313, t. 21.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, cleared old forest, alt. 120 m, April 27: *n. 2650* (tree, 17 m, fr. yellow-orange; nat. n.: *laràn'a*) — Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 70 m, May 4: *n. 2811* (tree, 35 m, ripe fr. prune-yellow; same nat. n.); old forest, alt. 200 m, frequent, May 10: *n. 2929* (tree, 16 m, fr. bright orange-coloured; same nat. n.).

Distribution: Java, Talaud.

Horsfieldia globularia (Bl.) Warb., l.c. 1897, 288, t. 21.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 60 m, June 21: *n. 3499* (shrub, fr. orange-yellow).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Celebes, Ambon, Morotai.

Horsfieldia novo-guineensis Warb., l.c. 68, 1897, 271, t. 23.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, partly cleared old forest, alt. 100 m, April 26: *n. 2628* (tree, about 20 m high, bole 9.8 m, diam. 0.3 m, trunk straight, almost cylindrical, somewhat furrowed, bark brown, branchlets d. brown, lvs. d. green, paler below, midrib yellowish, male buds green; nat. n.: *laràn'a*).

Distribution: Talaud, Aroe, Kai, Damar, New Guinea, Admiralty Islands.

Horsfieldia Roxburghii Warb., l.c. 68, 1897, 277, t. 21.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 50 m, June 20: *n. 3459* (lvs. d. green, infl. l. green, male buds yellow, branchlets grey); alt. 100 m, June 21: *n. 3510* (tree, about 24 m high, bole 18 m, diam. 0.35—0.25 m, lvs. dull green, male buds yellow; nat. n.: *koelèman*).

Distribution: Morotai, Ternate, Ambon.

Horsfieldia sylvestris (Houtt.) Warb., l.c. 68, 1897, 337, t. 12.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 50 m, frequent, June 20: *n. 3463* (tree, 25 m, fr. waxy l. green; nat. n.: *kokoemóétoe*); old forest, alt. 120 m, frequent, June 22: *n. 3538* (tree, 25 m; nat. n.: *kotomoetoe*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula?, Sumatra, Java, Moluccas, New Guinea.

Myristica ?celebica Miq., Ann. Mus. Bot. Lugd.-Bat. 1, 1865—1866, 47.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 200 m, May 9: *n. 2919* (tree, 17 m, fr. dull green; nat. n.: *láhoe*); old forest, alt. 150 m, May 11: *n. 2942* (tree, 23 m; nat. n.: *tóétoeng'a*) — Loc. 7, old forest, alt. 100 m, frequent, June 3: *n. 3329* (tree, 10 m, fr. greyish green; nat. n.: *tóétoeng'a*).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud.

MONIMIACEAE

Kibara cuspidata Bl., Mus. Bot. Lugd.-Bat. 2, 1852, 89.

Morotai, Loc. 12, G. Ligòjer, old forest, alt. 100 m, June 24: *n. 3588* (shrub,

flow l. yellow); alt. 60 m, same date: *n. 3597* (shrub, fr. black, on bright orange-yellow torus).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Philippines, Morotai.

Matthaea sancta Bl., l.c. 1852, 89, t. 10.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, old forest, bank of rivulet, alt. 50 m, June 3: *n. 3334* (small tree, 3 m, fr. bluish black, shining, reddish when young; nat. n.: *lábah*).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Philippines, Talaud, Boeroe.

LAURACEAE

Cassytha filiformis L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 35.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, N. Maraloem, beach, May 16: *n. 3039* (hemiparasitic, entire plant dull l. green, flow. yellowish white) — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, alt. 400 m, May 31: *n. 3241* (stems orange-yellow, peduncles green, flow. greenish white) — Miangas, Loc. 9, grass-slope, alt. 50 m, June 11: *n. 3396* (stems green or yellow, fr. white; nat. n.: *bári-bári*).

Distribution: pantropic.

Cinnamomum ?celebicum Miq., Ann. Mus. Bot. Lugd.-Bat. 1, 1863—1864, 264.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest on steep slope, alt. 200 m, frequent, May 6: *n. 2858* (tree, 6 m; nat. n.: *tahoelímpat'a*).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud.

Litsea accedens (Meissn.) Boerl., Handl. Fl. Ned. Ind. 3, 1900, 145.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, low forest, alt. 500 m, frequent, May 31: *n. 3267* (shrub, 1.5 m, fr. greenish yellow; nat. n.: *tahoerímpat'a*).

Distribution: Borneo, Celebes, Talaud.

Litsea Forstenii (Bl.) Boerl., l.c. 1900, 142.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 75 m, April 30: *n. 2694* (tree, 10 m, fr. d. green; nat. n.: *tahoerímpat'a*); Pasir Malap: riverbank, alt. 20 m, May 14: *n. 3010* (tree, 14 m; nat. n.: *abambáng'a*).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud, Moluccas.

Litsea Perrottetii F.—Vill., Nov. App. 1880, 180.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, cleared forest, alt. 40 m, April 25: *n. 2586* (tree, 30 m, buttresses 1.5 m high and spreading, wood used for house and proa construction; nat. n.: *ba'ánah*).

Distribution: Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas.

Nothaphoebe umbelliflora Bl., Mus. Bot. Lugd.-Bat. 1, 1851, 328.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 60 m, May 4: *n. 2823* (tree, 40 m, straight, diam. 0.95 m, buttresses 1 m high, 2 m spreading, wood very much in demand for house and proa construction; nat. n.: *linsánad'a*).

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 180 m, June 23: *n. 3564* (tree, 30 m, diam. 0.35 m; nat. n.: *oehéli* [Alifuru] or *goséhi* [Malay]).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Talaud, Morotai. Perhaps identical with *N. malabonga* (Blco.) Merr. from the Philippines.

HERNANDIACEAE

Hernandia ovigera L., in Stickm., Herb. Amb., 1754, 14.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, steep slope, alt. 75 m, May 5: *n. 2839* (tree, 18 m high, bole 15 m, diam. 0.21—0.14 m, lvs. d. green with pale nerves, lighter below, peduncles dull l. green, calyx white, corolla white, tube greenish; nat. n.: **lilòk'a oeróéne*).

Distribution: East Africa to Polynesia.

CAPPARIDACEAE

Crataeva religiosa Forst. f., Prodr., 1786, 35.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, sec. forest, alt. 20 m, May 21: *n. 3081* (small tree, fr. greyish brown; nat. n.: *papángi'nàsoe*).

Distribution: India to Polynesia.

Polanisia icosandra (L.) W. & A., Prodr., 1834, 22.

Nenoesa, Loc. 10, Merampi, cultivated grounds, alt. 100 m, June 13: *n. 3438* (herb, stem and lvs. l. green, calyx l. green, corolla yellow, fr. green; nat. n.: *abóéroe*).

Distribution: pantropic.

PITTOSPORACEAE

Pittosporum ferrugineum Ait., Hort. Kew., ed. 2, 2, 1811, 27.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, partly cleared old forest, alt. 120 m, April 27: *n. 2663* (tree, 14 m high, bole 3.65 m, diam. 0.44—0.22 m, trunk not cylindrical, bark grey, lvs. green; nat. n.: *riboesára*) — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, Pananasaran'a, open forest, alt. 350 m, June 2: *n. 3312* (tree, 10 m high, bole 5 m, diam. 0.15—0.12 m, trunk not straight, not cylindrical, lvs. rather d. green above, l. green below, midrib and petioles paler, ripe fr. yellowish orange, seeds brown, slimy; nat. n.: *abólo'a*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 22: *n. 3106* (tree, 17 m high, bole 6 m, diam. 0.24—0.20 m, trunk straight, cylindrical, pale grey, branchlets greyish brown, lvs. rather d. green above, lighter below, calyx and fr. l. green).

Distribution: S. China to Celebes, Moluccas, New Guinea and Australia.

ROSACEAE

Parastemon urophyllus A. DC., Ann. Sci. Nat. Sér. II, 18, 1842, 208.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 130 m, June 22: *n. 3529* (tree with very hard wood, 28 m, flow. white; nat. n.: *nòoeng*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Borneo, Morotai.

Pygeum ?latifolium Miq., Fl. Ind. Bat. I, pt. 1, 1855, 361.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, riverbank, alt. 50 m, May 1: *n. 2725* (tree, 27 m, fr. very l. yellowish green).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Soemba, Talaud.

Rubus fraxinifolius Poir., Enc. Bot. 6, 1804, 242.

Subspec. **celebicus** Bl., Bijdr. 1828, 1107.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 50 m, frequent, April 24: *n. 2522* (± climbing, flow. white, fr. bright red; nat. n.: *garoeat'a*) — Loc. 2, riverbank, alt. 40 m, scarce, May 3: *n. 2762* (same annotations and nat. n. as n. 2522).

Distribution of the subspecies: Celebes, Flores, Timor, Philippines, Talaud, Ternate, Ambon, Ceram; of the species: Formosa and Sumatra to Philippines and New Guinea.

LEGUMINOSAE

Albizzia saponaria (Lour.) Bl. in Miq., Fl. Ind. Bat. I, pt. 1, 1855, 19.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, open sec. forest, alt. 20 m, April 25: *n. 2565* (small curved tree, 3 m high, branchlets brown with pale lenticels, lvs. shining green, calyx and corolla greenish white, filaments white, anthers

green; nat. n.: *langík'a*) — Loc. 2, bank of K. Bahewa, skirt of forest, alt. 15 m, May 15: *n. 3028* (tree, 12 m high, bole 7 m, diam. 0.21—0.15 m, lvs. bright green above, slightly paler below, calyx greenish white, corolla, filaments, style and stigma white, anthers green; nat. n.: *langík'a*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, very frequent in sec. forest, alt. 150 m, May 20: *n. 3045* (tree, 8 m high, bole 6.2 m, diam. 0.11—0.09 m, further annotations as in n. 3028, but pedicels, calyx and corolla l. green; nat. n.: *langík'a*) — Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, very frequent in sec. forest, alt. 20 m, May 26: *n. 3191* (tree, same annotations and nat. n. as n. 3045).

Distribution: Indo China, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas, Timor, New Guinea.

Cassia mimosoides L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 379.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, in alang-alang field east of Lobo, alt. 15 m, May 15: *n. 3024* (erect shrub, as high as the alang-alang, stem brownish grey, lvs. bright green, l. green below, petioles greenish white, calyx and pedicel brownish green, corolla yellow) — Nenoesa, Loc. 10, Merampi, near Dampoelis, cultivated grounds, alt. 100 m, June 13: *n. 3423* (shrub, ± 1.5 m high, stem l. yellowish green or slightly reddish, lvs. dull green, petioles paler, calyx and pedicel reddish green, corolla red, fr. green, brown with age).

Distribution: India and S. China to Philippines and Australia.

Dalbergia candenatensis (Dennst.) Prain, Journ. As. Soc. Beng. 70, 1901, 49.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, frequent in mangrove, alt. 5 m, April 23: *n. 2493* (liana in the undergrowth, several m long, calyx greenish white, corolla white).

Distribution: India and S. China to Philippines and Australia.

Dalbergia ferruginea Roxb., Fl. Ind., ed. 2, 3, 1832, 228.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest: *n. 2601* (undershrub, flow. yellow; nat. n.: *saroempaníran'a*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, very frequent in sec. forest: *n. 3048* (± climbing shrub; same nat. n.).

Distribution: Borneo, Philippines, Talaud, New Guinea and Micronesia.

Dalbergia menoeides Prain in King, Journ. As. Soc. Beng. 66, 1898, 120.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, mangrove, alt. 2 m, April 23: *n. 2510a* (prostrate liana, collected under one number with *Derris heterophylla* [Willd.] Back., *Dalbergia* with fruits, *Derris* with flowers; nat. n.: *garàn-ap'a*; which of the two species bears this name cannot be concluded from the label).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Java, Talaud.

Derris heterophylla (Willd.) Backer in Heyne, Nutt. Pl. Ned. Ind., ed. 2, 2, 1927, 806.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, mangrove, alt. 2 m, April 23: *n. 2510* (prostrate liana, several m long, calyx greenish white, corolla white, anthers l. yellow, the leafless stems lie flat on the mud, bearing the erect infl.) [1]).

Distribution: tropical East Africa and Asia to Polynesia.

Desmodium gangeticum (L.) DC., Prodr. 2, 1825, 327.

[1]) cf. *Dalbergia menoeides*.

Miangas, Loc. 9, in grove on G. Batoe, alt. 80 m, June 11: *n. 3380* (undershrub, lvs. l. green, corolla white, fr. green; nat. n.: *adóéroe*).

Distribution: paleotropic.

Desmodium heterocarpum (L.) DC., Prodr. 2, 1825, 337.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 10 m, April 23: *n. 2487* (shrub, calyx greenish white, corolla violet and white, filaments l. green, whitish at base, fr. l. brownish green, slightly violet); clearing in sec. forest, alt. 15 m, April 25: *n. 2600* (undershrub, ± 2 m high, lvs. dull green, slightly bluish above, calyx l. green, corolla l. violet) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, sec. forest, alt. 150 m, May 20: *n. 3070* (shrub, branchlets brown, calyx l. green, corolla bluish violet, fr. l. brown).

Distribution: paleotropic.

Desmodium umbellatum (L.) DC., Prodr. 2, 1825, 325.

Nenoesa, Loc. 10, Merampi, on terrace of coral limestone, alt. 100 m, June 13: *n. 3431* (densely branched shrub, ± 4 m high, lvs. dull green above, l. green below, calyx l. green, corolla white, fr. dull green; nat. n.: *dára*).

Distribution: Mascarenes to Polynesia.

Desmofischera Holth., nov. gen. [1])

(Subfamily *Papilionatae*, Tribe *Hedysareae*, Group *Desmodiinae*)

Frutices vel suffrutices. *Folia* uni- vel trifoliolata, stipulis stipellisque suffulta. *Paniculae* terminales vel in axilla folii supremi axillares, floribus in fasciculis paucifloris dispositis. Pedicelli ebracteolati. *Calyx* campanulatus, 5-denticulatus, bilateraliter symmetricus. *Petala* unguiculata, vexillo obovato vel suborbiculari, apice paulo emarginato, alis vexillo carinaque multo brevioribus, carina partim connatis. *Stamina* 10, vexillari libero, ceteris filamentis parte suprema excepta connatis, tube stamineo usque ad basin ventraliter fisso. *Pistillum* gynophoro brevi insertum, rigide breviter pilosum, uniovulatum. *Legumen* deplanatum monospermum, haud articulatum, falcatum. *Semen* solitare, basin versus protrusum. *Embryo* ignotum.

Small shrubs or undershrubs. *Leaves* uni- or trifoliolate, stipules and stipels extant. *Flowers* in few-florous fascicles along the rhachis of the inflorescence. *Panicles* terminal or in the axil of the uppermost leaf. Pedicels ebracteolate. *Calyx* campanulate, with 5 unequal teeth. *Petals* distinctly clawed, vexillum obovate or almost circular and slightly emarginate, alae much shorter than vexillum or carina, partly connate with carina. *Stamens* 10, vexillary stamen entirely free, the others united into a tube, which is open on the ventral side. *Ovary* with short gynophore and short stiff hairs, uniovulate. *Pod* compressed, one-seeded, not articulate, more or less falcate. Seed directed downward. *Embryo* unknown.

[1]) The generic name, while alluding to the relation of *Desmofischera* and *Desmodium*, has been chosen in honour of the late Dr. Johann Baptist Fischer, a zoologist who, while in charge of Blume's and Von Siebold's collection in the Rijksherbarium at Brussels during the riots in September 1830, succeeded in safely transporting the valuable collections to Leiden, a perilous task, which will be recognized by every systematist to deserve the highest praise.

The present genus is closely related to *Desmodium* to which it shows much resemblance in the habit and in the structure of the flower, differing, however, in the pod, which is not articulate and contains only one seed. From the one-seeded *Desmodiinae* it differs in the general habit, in the form of the inflorescence, in the structure of the flower, in the presence of stipels and in the form of the fruit. For instance, both *Leptodesmia* Benth. and *Eleiotis* DC. are herbs, with much smaller leaflets of entirely different form, unstalked pistils and ovate fruits. *Phylacium* Benn. is also closely related but this is a liana with conspicuous bracts, an auriculate vexillum, the vexillary stamen free at base only and a sessile pistil.

I am much indebted to Dr C. A. Backer, who offered me valuable indications for the study of this new genus.

Desmofischera monosperma Holth., nov. spec., *Fig. 5* (p. 190).

Frutex vel suffrutex. *Caulis* haud vel paulo ramosa, lignosa, glabra vel minute pubescens, minute longitudinaliter striata, plerumque erecta nonnumquam partim prostrata, parte superiori tantum foliosa, basi c. 0.5 cm diametro. *Radix* primaria longa, lignosa, saepe cauli crassior. *Folia* alternata uni- vel interdum trifoliolata, petiolis (cum rhachide) glabris vel breviter tomentosis, i. s. longitudinaliter striatis, 2—9 cm longis; stipulae anguste triangulares, acutae, 0.4—0.5 cm longae, basi 0.2 cm latae, 5—9 nervis longitudinalibus praeditae; petioluli 0.2—0.4 cm longi, glabrescentes, rhachide in foliis trifoliolatis 2—3 cm longa; stipellae subulatae, glabrae, 0.5 cm longae; foliola chartacea, supra glabra vel subglabra, subtus pubescentia, oblongo-ovata, sub medio latiora, apicem versus gradatim angustata, 9—19 × 4—9 cm, apice acute acuminata, basi late acuta ima basi rotundata, marginibus integra paulo sinuata; costa media subtus conspicue, supra vix prominens, nervi secundarii 6—9, basales margine valde approximati, basi angulo 45°, apice 70° de costa adscendentes, paulo curvati, margines versus haud conjuncti; nervi tertiarii secundariis perpendiculares, ceterea reticulati; in foliis trifoliolatis foliola lateralia asymmetrica. *Paniculae* terminales vel in axillo folii supremi positae, usque ad 17 cm longae, rhachide minute pubescente, floribus fasciculis paucifloris unitis. Pedicelli ebracteolati, 0.2—0.25 cm longi, minute pubescentes, pilis haud hamosis ut in nonnullis *Desmodii* speciebus. *Flores* 0.8 cm longi, *calyx* 0.3 cm, fructu persistens, extus minute adpresse pubescens, intus glabra, campanulata 5-dentata, 2 dentibus posterioribus connatis lobis brevis obtusis exceptis, lateralibus late acutis, dente anteriore anguste acuta quam ceterae longiore, omnibus c. 0.1 cm longis. *Corolla* alba vel paulo lilacina; vexillum obovatum vel suborbiculare, brevissime unguiculatum, basi haud auriculatum, 0.5—0.6 × 0.4—0.6 cm, apice paulo emarginatum; alae oblique oblongae, petalis ceteris multo breviores, carina partim connatae, 0.4 × 0.2 cm, apice rotundatae, longiuscule unguiculatae, basi unilateraliter auriculatae; carinae partes duae oblongae, 0.7 × 0.3 cm, apice rotundatae, basi abrupte angustatae, unguiculatae. *Stamina* 10, c. 0.5 cm longa, stamen vexillare liberum, ceterorum filamenta partibus superioribus exceptis connata, tubo usque ad basin ventraliter fisso; filamentorum partes liberae inaequales, c. 0.1 cm longae, stamina omnia fertilia, antherae parvae, aequales. *Pistillum* c. 0.5 cm


a
b
c
d
e
f
g
h
p
n
m
k
C.MULDER DEL.

longum, ovarium uni-ovulatum, pubescens, gynophoro c. 0.15 cm longo, stylo glabro, 0.15 cm longo, a medio sursum curvato, stigmate obtuso, terminali. *Legumen* c. 3 × 0.4 cm, haud articulatum, valde deplanatum; semen solitare, medio leguminis affixum, basin versus protrusum. *Embryo* ignotum.

A small *shrub* or undershrub, up to about 0.75 m high. *Stem* not or slightly branched, woody, pale brown when dry, glabrous or shortly pubescent, minutely longitudinally grooved, mostly erect, sometimes partly prostrate, provided with leaves in the upper part only, at base about 0.5 cm in diameter. Main *root* strong, woody, up to 25 cm long, often thicker than stem. *Leaves* alternate, uni- or sometimes trifoliolate; petioles (and rhachis) glabrous or minutely tomentose, longitudinally grooved, 2—9 cm long; stipules narrowly triangular, acute, with 5—9 distinct longitudinal nerves, 0.4—0.5 cm long, about 0.2 cm broad at base; petiolules 0.2—0.4 cm long, glabrescent; rhachis in trifoliolate leaves 2—3 cm long; stipels subulate, 0.5 cm long, glabrous; leaflets chartaceous, oblong-ovate, greatest width below the middle from where the leaf gradually narrows, apex acutely acuminate, base broadly acute, the very base rounded, margins entire, slightly sinuate, 9—19 × 4—9 cm, glabrous and shining above with only some hairs on midrib and on bases of secondary nerves, densely pubescent below, particularly on the nerves, bright green, upper surface slightly darker than lower one; midrib prominent below, hardly so above, secondary nerves 6—9, the basal ones very close near the margin, those near the base ascending at an angle of about 45°, those in the upper part at an angle of about 70°, slightly curved, not joined near the margin, tertiary nerves reticulate, starting at almost right angles from midrib and secondary nerves, slender; in the trifoliolate leaves the lower leaflets are asymmetrical. *Inflorescences* terminal or axillary, paniculate, up to 17 cm long, flowers fascicled along the rhachis, which is shortly pubescent and longitudinally grooved. Pedicels 0.2—0.25 cm long, ebracteolate, covered with short hairs, which are not hook-shaped, as occurs in some species of *Desmodium*. *Flowers* about 0.8 cm long. *Calyx* about 0.3 cm, persistent in fruit, provided with short appressed hairs outside, glabrous within, campanulate, with five teeth, two posterior teeth connate but for two short blunt lobes, the two lateral teeth more pointed, rather broad, anterior tooth pointed, more slender and longer than the lateral ones, all teeth about 0.1 cm long, the lower one 0.125 cm. *Corolla* white or pale violet; vexillum obovate or almost circular, very shortly unguiculate, not auriculate at base, 0.5—0.6 × 0.4—0.6 cm, apex slightly emarginate; alae obliquely oblong, much shorter than carina and partially connate with it, 0.4 × 0.2 cm, apex rounded, rather long clawed, base unilaterally auriculate; each half of carina oblong, about 0.7 × 0.3 cm, apex rounded, abruptly narrowed into the claw. *Stamens* 10, about 0.5 cm long, vexillary stamen entirely free, other filaments connate so as to form

Fig. 5 — *Desmofischera monosperma* Holth., n. gen., n. sp. — a. habit; b. trifoliolate leaf; c. calyx outside; d. ditto, split open; e. vexillum; f. carina and alae; g. carina from above; h. flower bud; k. staminal tube; m. carpel and style; n. pod and p. seed (a. after *Lam n. 2637*, b. after *Lam n. 3611*, c.—n. after *Lam n. 3057*).

a tube which is ventrally split down to the base; free terminal part of the filaments unequal in length, about 0.1 cm long; all stamens fertile; anthers small, equal in form. *Pistil* about 0.5 cm long, ovary uniovulate, pubescent, gynophore about 0.15 cm, style about 0.15 cm long, glabrous, curved upward from the middle or slightly below it, where it is somewhat broadened, stigma large, blunt, terminal. *Pod* about 3 cm long and 0.4 cm broad, not articulate, very flat, falcate, minutely pubescent, valves chartaceous, conspicuously reticulate, not dehiscent? *Seed* solitary, attached in the middle of the pod, directed towards the base. *Embryo* unknown.

K a r a k e l o n g, Loc. 1, cleared old forest, rather frequent, alt. 90 m, April 26: *n. 2637* (small undershrub, partly prostrate, lvs. green, calyx l. green, corolla and filaments white, anthers l. brown, ovary green, fr. green; *type specimen*, L., dupl. Bz.) — S a l e b a b o e, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, cleared old forest, rather scarce, scattered, alt. 350 m, May 20: *n. 3057* (small shrub, stem l. brownish grey, lvs. d. green, slightly paler below, calyx and pedicel green, corolla white, filaments and pistil greenish white).

M o r o t a i, Loc. 12, Goegoeti, old forest, alt. 300 m, June 25: *n. 3611* (shrub, about 0.75 m high, lvs. d. green above, paler below, dull, calyx greenish white, corolla, filaments and stigma white, ovary l. green); Marilako, old forest, along trail, rather frequent, scattered, alt. 20 m, June 28: *n. 3645* (shrub, lvs. bright green, paler below, calyx and pedicel l. green, corolla l. violet); old forest, rather frequent, scattered, alt. 10 m, June 30: *n. 3681* (lvs. bright green, slightly bluish green below, nerves l. green, calyx l. green, corolla white, fr. green).

Inocarpus edulis Forst., Char. Gen., 1776, 66, t. 33.

K a r a k e l o n g, Loc. 2, very frequent in old forest, bank of K. Tatamboewe, alt. 50 m, May 7: *n. 2876* (straight tree, 29 m high, bole 12.5 m, diam. 0.76—0.59 m, trunk furrowed, brown, branchlets brown, bast contains much blood-red gum with acrid taste, lvs. d. green, midrib paler above, fr. green, pedicel brown; gum used as medicine against sprue; nat. n.: *iáma*) — M i a n g a s, on coral limestone terrace, alt. 5 m, June 11: *n. 3359* (tree, ± 10 m high, trunk heavy, furrowed; often cultivated for the edible seeds; nat. n.: *kiáma*).

D i s t r i b u t i o n: Mauritius to Polynesia.

Intsia bijuga (Colebr.) O. Ktze, Rev. Gen. Pl., 1891, 192; Meyer Drees, Bull. Jard. bot. Buit., Sér. III, 16, 1938, 89.

Forma **glabra** Meyer Drees, l.c. 91.

K a b o e r o e a n g, Loc. 4, Lapean'a forest reserve, very frequent in cleared forest, alt. 75 m, May 26: *n. 3173* (tree, 18 m high, bole 10 m, diam. 0.39—0.30 m, heartwood brown, very hard, bark l. greyish brown; lvs. bright green, midrib paler; wood much in demand for house construction; nat .n.: *síkat'a*).

D i s t r i b u t i o n both of the species and the forma: Madagascar to Polynesia.

Macropsychanthus dolichobotrys Holth., nov. spec., *Fig. 6* (p. 223).

Frutex scandens, robusta, glabra, partibus juvenilibus pubescentibus exceptis. *Folia* trifoliolata; foliola late ovata, glabra, 11—15 × 7—10 cm, apice acuminata, basi rotundata; petioluli crassi; stipulae acuto-ovatae;

stipellae minutae, subulatae. *Paniculae* angustae, ebracteatae, robustae, plus quam tripedales, axillares, multiflorae, basi glabrae, apicem versus pubescentes. *Flores* magni, 2.5 cm longi, violacei, bibracteolati. *Legumina* lignosa, 20 cm longa, semina disciformia, 2—5.

A *liana,* climbing to a height of about 30 m by means of the young shoots. Branches greyish brown when dry, with distinct lenticels, glabrous, the younger ones especially at the nodes with an appressed indumentum of long hairs. *Leaves* alternate, trifoliolate; petioles glabrous or subglabrous, 7—10 cm long, the base with a swollen, curved articulation; stipules acutely ovate, 0.3 × 0.4 cm, more or less pubescent; petiolules about 0.8 cm long, articulate and swollen, glabrescent; the rhachis between the base of the petiolule of the terminal leaflet and those of the lateral leaflets 2.8—3.7 cm long, glabrous and as thick as the petiole; stipels subulate, about 0.2 cm long, glabrous; leaflets chartaceous, broadly ovate, glabrous or the younger ones with some hairs on the midrib and the nerves below, 11—15 × 7—10 cm, somewhat shining at both sides, pale green, the upper surface a little darker than the lower one, apex acutely acuminate, base rounded, margins entire, midrib prominent below, hardly so above, secondary nerves 7—9, ascending at an angle of about 50°, slightly curved at base, strongly so near the margin and not joined there, tertiary nerves transverse, slender. *Inflorescences* axillary, narrowly paniculate, up to 1 m long, the peduncle (and rhachis) woody, dark green with brown lenticels, glabrous and 1 cm in diameter at base, tapering and gradually ferruginously pubescent towards the top, peduncle about 50 cm long, lateral ramifications ebracteate, slender, up to 2.5 cm long, bearing one open flower at a time and up to 9 scars of fallen flowers. Pedicels about 1 cm long and densely ferruginously pubescent; bracteoles 2, inserted immediately below the calyx, almost circular and 0.6 cm in diameter, densely pubescent below, glabrous above except at base. *Flowers* 2.5 cm long, *calyx* 1.7 cm, densely appressedly pubescent outside, villose inside, tube cylindrical, making an angle with the peduncle, lobes 5, 0.4—0.5 cm long and 0.4 cm broad, anterior lobe rounded, pubescent without, glabrous within except the margins, lateral lobes more or less deltoid, the anterior margin thinner and glabrous on either side. *Corolla* violet, petals all long-clawed, vexillum obovate, 2.5 × 1.8 cm, apex slightly emarginate, with two callosities near the base, alae obliquely oblong, 2 × 1 cm, apex rounded, subabruptly narrowed at lower half, very abruptly so into the narrow claw, each half of the carina oblong, about 2.3 × 0.7 cm, apex rounded, gradually narrowed into the claw, bases of vexillum and carina white, the filament of the vexillary stamen free at base for a small distance (0.3 cm), for about 0.6 cm united with the other filaments, the free terminal part about 0.7 cm long, the longest filaments about 2 cm, anthers brownish white, oblong, about 0.4 × 0.1 cm. *Gynaeceum* densely covered with long yellowish white hairs, the style glabrous and filiform. Ripe *pods* woody, brown, up to 20 cm long, 5.5 cm broad and about 2.5 cm thick, provided with scattered ferruginous hairs, acuminate and mucronulate, the margins often somewhat sinuate, base with a stout gynophore of about 2 cm long and 0.7 cm thick; pedicel about 1 cm long and 0.8 cm thick. Seeds 2—5 in a pod, dark brown and almost circular,

glabrous, about 3 cm in diameter and 1.8 cm thick in the middle, slightly sloping down towards the margin; raphe grey, 6.6 cm long and 0.25 cm broad, surrounding the seed but for about 2 cm.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, bank of K. Tatamboewe, alt. 40 m, May 8: *n. 2893* (fruiting specimen); Pasir Malap, east of Lobo, frequent in old forest on riverbank, alt. 20 m, May 14: *n. 3002* (specimen with flowers; nat. n.: *limpoeróés'a*; *type specimen*, L., dupl. Bz.).

Remarks: Of the genus *Macropsychanthus* only five other species are known, viz. *M. Lauterbachii* Harms and *M. novoguineensis* Pulle from New Guinea, *M. mindanaensis* Merr. and *M. ferrugineus* Merr.[1]) from the Philippines (Mindanao) and *M. carolinensis* Kanehira & Hosokawa from the Carolines (Truk). Characteristic for the new species are the robust habit, and particularly the long and woody panicles with ebracteate and relatively elongate lateral ramifications. It differs:

a. from *M. Lauterbachii* by the broader and longer acuminate leaflets, by the longer and more slender lateral ramifications of the panicle, by the longer pedicels, by the large bracteoles just below the calyx and in that the vexillary filament is united with the other filaments for a longer distance.
b. from *M. novoguineensis* by the ovate, not lanceolate stipules, the longer petioles and the larger and longer acuminate leaflets, the longer and stouter inflorescences, the ebracteate and longer lateral ramifications of the panicle, which are not thickened at the top and bear the scars not only at the top of the ramification but scattered over the whole branchlet, by the larger flowers and in that the vexillary filament is united at base with the other filaments for a longer distance.
c. from *M. mindanaensis* and *M. ferrugineus* by the broader stipules, the stipels being much shorter than the petiolules, the longer acuminate leaves which are not pubescent as in *M. ferrugineus*, the stouter and longer inflorescences, the ebracteate lateral ramifications of the panicle which are longer and not thickened at the top and have the scars scattered over the whole branchlet.
d. from *M. carolinensis* by the smaller leaves, the much shorter rhachis of the leaves (about one tenth), the longer panicles, the smaller flowers which are not pink. By lack of material or a figure it is impossible to state more detailed differences between this species and *M. dolichobotrys*.

Mastersia Bakeri (Koord.) Back., in Koord., Suppl. Flora N. O. Celebes 3, 1922, 9.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 60 m, June 21: *n. 3500* (liana several m long, lvs. d. green above, l. green below, petioles and calyx l. green, corolla dirty red, keel red; nat. n.: *abèteh*).

Distribution: Celebes, Halmahera, Morotai.

Mucuna gigantea (Willd.) DC., Prodr. 2, 1825, 405.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, wayside, alt. 5 m, April 28: *n. 2680* (climb-

[1]) Probably *M. ferrugineus* has to be considered a variety of *M. mindanaensis*.

ing, ± 5 m long, calyx l. green, corolla and filaments greenish white, anthers d. brown, style greenish yellow, fr. green).

Distribution: India to Polynesia.

Ormosia calavensis Azaola in Blco, Fl. Filip., ed. 2, 1845, 230.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, Pananasaran'a, open forest, alt. 300 m, June 1: *n. 3296* (tree, 17 m high, bole 13 m, diam. 0.50—0.35 m, trunk curved, not cylindrical, lvs. bright green, slightly paler below, petioles l. yellowish green, infl. and peduncles l. brown, calyx brownish red pubescent, corolla dirty l. violet, standard l. green in the middle, filaments white, anthers d. grey, pistil l. greenish yellow; nat. n.: *nàki'mbawái*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, frequent in cleared old forest, alt. 100 m, May 21: *n. 3073* (tree, 19.3 m high, bole 13.3 m, diam. 0.48—0.30 m, trunk straight, lvs. as in n. 3296, calyx coffee-brown, pedicels paler, corolla white, style and ovary pale yellowish green; nat. n.: *nàki'mbawái*).

Distribution: Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas (Ambon).

Parkia javanica (Lam.) Merr., Sp. Blancoanae, 1918, 168.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, fairly frequent in sec. forest, alt. 100 m, April 27: *n. 2652* (tree with flat top, ± 10 m high, bole 2 m, diam. 0.3 m at a height of 1 m, low branched, lvs. d. green above, l. green below, ferruginously pubescent, calyx l. green, corolla l. yellowish green in bud, fr. d. brown; nat. n.: *lanángoh*) — Loc. 3, at junction of K. Bahewa and K. Tatamboewe, riverbank, alt. 40 m, fairly frequent, May 11: *n. 2945* (tree, 13 m high, bole 8 m, diam. 0.22—0.18 m, branchlets reddish brown, lvs. dull green, d. above, paler below, petioles brownish green; nat. n.: *lariángoh*).

Distribution: India to Philippines, Talaud and Timor.

Pongamia pinnata (L.) Merr., Interpret. Herb. Amb., 1917, 271.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, beach, alt. 1 m, April 23: *n. 2499* (tree, 8 m high, lvs. green, nerves l. green, fr. green; nat. n.: *laíta*).

Distribution: Mascarenes to Polynesia.

Pueraria pulcherrima (Koord.) Merr., in Koord.-Schum., Syst. Verz. 2, 1914, 132.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, very frequent in forest on riverbank, alt. 50 m, May 1: *n. 2718* (liana, several m long, bright green above, silky shining l. green below, pedicels l. green, calyx dull violet, corolla pale violet; nat. n.: *bàgeh*).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud, Philippines.

Pueraria Thunbergiana (S. & Z.) Benth., Journ. Linn. Soc. Bot. 9, 1865, 122.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, bank of K. Bahewa, alt. 1 m, fairly frequent, May 16: *n. 3037* (climbing, several m long, lvs. l. green, paler below, calyx tube dirty violet, lobes and pedicels l. green, corolla violet, alae a little darker, vexillum with large yellow spot in the centre, filaments, style and stigma white, anthers pale yellow; nat. n.: *bàgeh*).

Distribution: India to Japan and Polynesia.

Uraria lagopodioides (L.) Desv., Mém. Soc. Linn. Paris 4, 1826, 309.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, wayside, alt. 20 m, May 21: *n. 3089* (partly prostrate undershrub, lvs. dull green, slightly paler below, calyx l. reddish

brown, turning brown with age, covered with white hairs, corolla l. violet).

Distribution: India and S. China to tropical Australia.

OXALIDACEAE

Biophytum sensitivum (L.) DC., Prodr. 1, 1824, 690.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, on ladang, alt. 150 m, May 21: *n. 3084* (herb, stem reddish brown, lvs. sensitive, d. green above, l. green below, red when young, petioles often red, calyx green, corolla yellow) — Miangas, Loc. 9, G. Soro, grass-slope, alt. 60 m, June 11: *n. 3397* (herb, lvs. bright green, petioles and stem red, calyx l. green, corolla yellow, lvs. sensitive; nat. n.: *róénti'i*).

Distribution: pantropic.

RUTACEAE

Evodia ?glabra (Bl.) Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 245.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, frequent on riverbank, alt. 50 m, May 4: *n. 2821* (tree, 18 m; nat. n.: *maratálang'a*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Celebes, Talaud, Lesser Sunda Islands, New Guinea.

Evodia latifolia DC., Prodr. 1, 1824, 724.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest behind beach, April 23: *n. 2506* (shrub; nat. n.: *sengíjoh*); sec. forest, alt. 100 m, very frequent, April 25: *n. 2576* (tree, 8 m; same nat. n. as n. 2506).

Distribution: India to Celebes, Philippines?, Talaud and Halmahera.

Evodia ?Minahassae (Miq.) Teijsm. & Binn., Nat. Tijdschr. N. I. 29, 1867, 255.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, Pasir Malap, old forest, alt. 60 m, May 13: *n. 2974* (tree, 25 m, flow. white; nat. n.: *maratálam'a*).

Distribution: N. Celebes, Talaud.

Glycosmis pentaphylla (Retz) Correa, Ann. Mus. Hist. Nat. Par. 6, 1805, 386.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, Pasir Malap, old forest, alt. 40 m, May 13: *n. 2985* (small tree, flow. white) — Miangas, Loc. 9, G. Batoe, in grove, 90 m alt., very frequent, June 11: *n. 3354* (same annotations as n. 2985; nat. n.: *sóéwi*).

Distribution: India and S. China to Philippines and New Guinea.

Lunasia amara Blco, Fl. Filip., 1837, 783.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, cleared old forest, 100 m alt., April 27: *n. 2661* (small tree, 2 m) — Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 30 m, May 13: *n. 2987* (small tree, 3 m) — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, low forest on top, alt. 480 m, fairly frequent, June 1: *n. 3291* (shrub); alt. 250 m, June 2: *n. 3305* (shrub, flow. yellowish) — Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, Lapean'a forest reserve, alt. 75 m, May 26: *n. 3181* (large shrub, 3 m; nat. n.: *malimpètan'a*).

Distribution: Java, Borneo, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Aroe, New Guinea.

Melicope triphylla (Lam.) Merr., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 7, 1912, 375.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 100 m, April 24: *n. 2533* (small tree, 8 m; nat. n.: *sengíjoh*) — Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 7: *n. 2869* (tree, 12 m, flow. greenish white; nat. n.: *arangíjoh*).

Distribution: Philippines, Talaud.

Micromelum minutum Seem., Mission Fiji, 1862, 434.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, sec. forest, alt. 50 m, May 20: *n. 3046* (small tree, 4 m, fr. orange-red; nat. n.: **marimbòs'a*).

Distribution: India and S. China to Polynesia and Australia.

Triphasia trifolia (Burm. f.) P. Wils., Torreya 9, 1909, 33.

Miangas, Loc. 9, in grove on G. Kota, 90 m alt., frequent, June 11: *n. 3356* (shrub, 2.5 m, flow. white, frequent; nat. n.: *aloewàtoe*).

Distribution: pantropic.

Zanthoxylum Avicennae (Lam.) DC., Prodr. 1, 1824, 726.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, frequent, on sunny slope, alt. 300 m, May 31: *n. 3254* (small tree or large shrub, 3 m, flow. greenish white, fr. greenish yellow and red, seeds black; nat. n.: **marimbòs'a*).

Distribution: S. China, Philippines (mountains), Talaud, Moluccas?

BURSERACEAE (H. J. Lam)

Canarium asperum Benth., Lond. Journ. Bot. 2, 1843, 215; H. J. Lam, Bull. Jard. bot. Buit., Sér. III, 12, 1932, 461, fig. 66.

Forma *α* **legitimum** H. J. Lam, l.c. 463.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, cleared old forest, alt. 40 m, April 25: *n. 2580* (young tree, ± 10 m high, lvs. shining; nat. n.: **nàti'mbaráwo*) — Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 100 m, May 7: *n. 2885* (very young tree; same nat. n.); alt. 230 m, frequent, May 10: *n. 2927* (young tree, 12 m high, bole 10.4 m, trunk l. grey, lvs. bright green, innovations brown pubescent; same nat n.).

Distribution of forma *α*: Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea.

Forma *β* **triphyllum** H. J. Lam, l.c. 463.

Morotai, Loc. 12, alt. 100 m, frequent in old forest, June 21: *n. 3505* (tree, 18 m high, bole 11 m, diam. 0.20—0.15 m, lvs. shining above, calyx greenish white, corolla creamy white, fr. dull green; nat. n.: *nerihaka*).

Distribution of forma *β*: Ambon, Ternate, Morotai.

Distribution of the species: Kangean, Lesser Sunda Islands, Celebes, N. Borneo, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea.

Canarium balsamiferum Willd., Sp. Pl. 4, 1805, 760; H. J. Lam, l.c. 1932, 485, fig. 75.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 7: *n. 2870* (tree, 17 m high, bole 10.6 m, diam. 0.19—0.15 m, lvs. shining, d. green above, l. green below, nerves lighter on either side, calyx l. green, corolla white, fr. dull green; nat. n.: **màti'mpóéne*); Pasir Malap, frequent in old forest, alt. 60 m, May 13: *n. 2978* (young tree, with l. grey trunk, fr. dull black-violet, calyx dirty green; same nat. n.).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud, Moluccas (Boeroe, Ambon).

Canarium commune L., Mant. I, 1767, 127; H. J. Lam, l.c. 1932, 509.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, very frequent in old forest, alt. 260 m, May 23: *n. 3131* (tree, 30 m high, bole 14 m, diam. 0.80—0.73 m, buttresses 3.5 m high and spreading, trunk grey, straight, heartwood brown, very hard, used for house and proa construction, fr. shining green, seeds edible; nat. n.: *nàki*).

Morotai, Loc. 12, Goegoeti, very frequent in old forest, alt. 50 m, June 20: *n. 3457* (tree, 30 m high, bole 20 m, diam. 0.7—0.5 m, calyx l. green, corolla l. yellow; nat. n.: *níar*).

Distribution, in a wild state: Kangean, Salijara, Celebes, Talaud, Flores, Ternate, Morotai; widely cultivated as a wayside tree.

Canarium decumanum Gaertn., De Fruct. et Sem. 2, 1791, 99; H. J. Lam, l.c. 1932, 435.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, frequent in old forest, alt. 20 m, June 28: *n. 3637* (tree, 15 m high, bole 6 m, diam. 0.35—0.25 m; nat. n.: *hobóéroe* [Alifuru] or *hápo* [Moluccan Malay]).

Distribution: Borneo, Moluccas (Morotai, Ternate, Batjan).

Remark: This tree may attain a hight of more than 50 m.

Canarium hirsutum Willd., Sp. Pl. 4, 1805, 760; H. J. Lam, l.c. 1932, 466, fig. 67.

Forma *α* **typicum** H. J. Lam, l.c. 1932, 466.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, old forest, alt. 20 m, June 28: *n. 3652* (young tree; nat. n.: *médeh-médeh*).

Distribution of the forma: Malay Peninsula to Philippines, Celebes and Morotai; of the species: Malay Peninsula to Philippines and New Guinea.

Canarium lian H. J. Lam, l.c. 1932, 440, fig. 52.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, Goegoeti, alt. 50 m, June 20: *n. 3462* (young tree; nat. n.: *lían*); alt. 60 m, same date: *n. 3472* (young tree, petioles and stipules l. brown pubescent); same locality, frequent, June 22: *n. 3531* (tree with straight cylindrical trunk, 15 m high, bole 11 m, diam. 0.15—0.12 m, bark grey-spotted, branches grey, branchlets brown; nat. n.: *lían*).

Distribution: Batjan, Morotai.

Garuga floribunda Decne., Nouv. Ann. Mus. Par. 3, 1834, 477; H. J. Lam, l.c. 1932, 326, fig. 7A.

Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, Tonan'a forest reserve, cleared old forest, very frequent, alt. 25 m, May 26: *n. 3178* (tree, 12 m high, with three trunks united at the base, bole 10 m, diam. 0.12—0.08 m, lvs. dull green, d. green above, l. green below; nat. n.: *tatóél'a*).

Distribution: E. Java, Kangean, Celebes, Lesser Sunda Islands, Philippines, Moluccas to Polynesia and Australia (the two other species of the genus are continental Asiatic).

Haplolobus moluccanus H. J. Lam, l.c. 1932, 407, fig. 40.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 130 m, June 22: *n. 3550* (young tree, with white bark); Goegoeti, G. Ligòjer, frequent in old forest, alt. 100 m, June 24: *n. 3583* (tree with straight, cylindrical trunk, 12 m high, bole 9 m, diam. 0.15—0.11 m, bark l. grey, lvs. d. green, nerves and petioles lighter; nat. n.: *lían daoen lèbar* (lian with large leaves); Marilako, old forest, alt. 20 m, frequent, June 28: *n. 3653* (tree, 13.7 m high, diam. 0.08—0.05 m, further same annotations and nat. n. as n. 3583).

Distribution: Ambon, Halmahera, Morotai (the genus centres in New Guinea).

MELIACEAE

Aglaia argentea Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 170.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 50 m, June 20: *n. 3471* (small tree, 3 m, fr. cinnamon-brown pubescent); Marilako, old forest, alt. 20 m, June 28: *n. 3651* (tree, 15 m, infl. brown pubescent; nat. n.: *lóéka-lóékam*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Morotai, New Guinea.

Aglaia ganggo Miq., Fl. Ind. Bat., Suppl., 1860—1861, 506.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, frequent in old forest, alt. 320 m, May 23: *n. 3126* (tree, 15 m, infl. brown pubescent; nat. n.: *parawóénoet'a*).

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 60 m, June 20: *n. 3473* (small tree, 4 m high, infl. l. greenish brown).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Talaud, Morotai, Ambon.

Dysoxylum arborescens (Bl.) Miq., Ann. Mus. Bot. Lugd.-Bat. 4, 1868, 24.
Morotai, Loc. 12, G. Ligòjer, frequent in old forest, alt. 50 m, June 27: *n. 3631* (tree, 10 m, flow. white, disagreeable odour).
Distribution: Indo China to Timor, Philippines and Moluccas.
Vavaea amicorum Benth., Lond. Journ. Bot. 2, 1843, 212.
Nenoesa, Loc. 10, Merampi, very frequent in sec. forest, alt. 100 m, June 13: *n. 3417* (tree, 15 m, flow. white, fr. l. green; nat. n.: *antamát'a*).
Distribution: Philippines, Talaud, New Guinea, Polynesia.

POLYGALACEAE

Epirixanthes elongata Bl., Cat. Gew. Buitenz., 1823, 82.
Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 80 m, May 2: *n. 2745* (saprophytic, stem pale brown, infl. d. brown at base, l. brown towards apex).
Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Talaud, Ambon.
Polygala glomerata Lour., Fl. For. Conchinch., 1790, 426.
Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open slope, alt. 400 m, May 31: *n. 3250* (herb, flow. white with lilac heart).
Distribution: India to Philippines, Talaud and ? New Guinea.

EUPHORBIACEAE

Acalypha amentacea Roxb., Fl. Ind., ed. 2, 3, 1832, 676.
Karakelong, Loc. 1, very frequent in sec. forest, alt. 10 m, April 23: *n. 2497* (shrub; nat. n.: *laransiàn'a*); alt. 20 m, April 25: *n. 2567* (large shrub to 6 m; same nat. n.) — Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, very frequent in sec. forest, alt. 20 m, May 26: *n. 3190* (protandrous; same nat. n.) — Miangas, Loc. 9, in grove on G. Batoe, alt. 80 m, June 11: *n. 3358* (petioles reddish, infl. l. yellowish green; same nat. n.).
Distribution: Java, Borneo, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea.
Acalypha boehmerioides Miq., Fl. Ind. Bat., Suppl., 1861—1862, 459.
Miangas, Loc. 9, P. Baronto, limestone, alt. 7 m, June 11: *n. 3368* (undershrub, infl. l. green).
Distribution: Malaysia to Polynesia.
Acalypha Caturus Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 619.
Karakelong, Loc. 2, riverbank, alt. 40 m, May 3: *n. 2766* (curved tree, 15 m, nerves greenish yellow, infl. green).
Distribution: Sumatra to Philippines, Moluccas and New Guinea.
Alchornea rugosa (Lour.) Muell. Arg., Linnaea 34, 1865, 170.
Salebaboe, Loc. 3, wayside, alt. 20 m, very frequent, May 21: *n. 3093* (shrub, 2 m, twigs and petioles reddish; nat. n.: *aoemángan'a*) — Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, sec. forest, alt. 20 m, frequent, May 26: *n. 3189* (infl. l. green, fr. dirty green-violet; same nat. n.).
Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 130 m, locally frequent, June 22: *n. 3556* (shrub, 1.5 m).
Distribution: S. China and Malay Peninsula to Polynesia, New Guinea and Timor.
Antidesma celebicum Koord., Meded. 's Lands Plantent. 19, 1898, 625.
Miangas, Loc. 9, G. Kota, small grove, alt. 90 m, June 11: *n. 3379* (small tree, ± 6 m high, lvs. bright green, infl. l. green, anthers greenish yellow; nat. n.: *bánah*).
Distribution: Java, Borneo, Celebes, Talaud, Moluccas, Lesser Sunda Islands, New Guinea.
Antidesma Cumingii Muell. Arg. in DC., Prodr. 15, 1866, 249.
Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 100 m, April 30: *n. 2693* (very lax shrub, 3 m, fr. pink; nat. n.: *góénoe*) — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, alt. 300 m, open forest, June 1: *n. 3298* (shrub, 1.5 m, branchlets l. grey) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, old forest, alt. 320 m, May 23: *n. 3136*.
Distribution: Philippines, Talaud.

Antidesma ghaesembilla Gaertn., Fruct. et Sem. 1, 1788, 189, t. 39.

Nenoesa, Loc. 10, Merampi, alt. 150 m, very frequent in sec. forest, June 13: *n. 3424* (tree, 0.5—8 m, fr. red, acid, edible; nat. n.: *tara'óéoe*).

Distribution: paleotropic.

Baccaurea javanica (Bl.) Muell. Arg. in DC., Prodr. 15, 1866, 465.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 75 m, May 2: *n. 2739* (tree, 6 m, fr. shining green; nat. n.: *anggóésip'a*).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Talaud.

Bischofia javanica Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 1168.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 8: *n. 2901* (heavy tree, 23 m high, bole 16 m, diam. 0.63—0.32 m, trunk straight, cylindrical, bark brown, strongly scaling, bast with blood-red gum, sapwood red, heartwood d. reddish brown, very hard, lvs. d. green; wood much in demand for house construction, bast used for dying fishing cords; nat. n.: *bóéroeng'a*).

Distribution: India and S. China to Formosa and Polynesia.

Blumeodendron paucinervium (Elm.) Merr., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 16, 1920, 555.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, frequent in old forest, alt. 320 m, May 23: *n. 3122* (tree, 12 m; nat. n.: *aloewàtoe*).

Distribution: Philippines, Talaud. Closely related to *B. tokbrai* Kurz from Sumatra, Java and Borneo.

Breynia cernua (Poir.) Muell.-Arg. in DC., Prodr. 15, 1866, 439.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 10 m, April 23: *n. 2507* (shrub, 1.5 m, flow. l. green, fr. bright red; nat. n.: *lalamóéran'a*) — Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 200 m, May 10: *n. 2933* — Miangas, Loc. 9, in grove on G. Batoe, alt. 80 m, June 11: *n. 3365* (nat. n.: *larimóéta*).

Distribution: Java, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas, Soemba, Timor, New Guinea, Australia.

Bridelia glauca Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 597.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, riverbank, alt. 40 m, May 7: *n. 2875* (tree, 13.5 m, fr. shining l. green; nat. n.: *lábah*).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas.

Bridelia minutiflora Hook. f., Fl. Brit. Ind. 5, 1887, 273.

Kaboeroeang, Loc. 5, cleared forest, alt. 200 m, May 27: *n. 3201* (tree, 9 m; nat. n.: *samái*; wood for house construction, bast used for colouring the saguwer [palm wine] red).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula to Philippines and New Guinea.

Claoxylon longifolium (Bl.) Miq., Fl. Ind. Bat. 1, pt. 2, 1859, 386.

Nenoesa, Loc. 11, Garete, cleared forest on limestone, alt. 5 m, June 14: *n. 3449* (young tree, 2.5 m, flow. greenish white, fr. l. green; nat. n.: *antóéwoe*).

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 120 m, June 22: *n. 3534* (shrub, 1.5 m, fr. bright green; nat. n.: *ladatáit*).

Distribution: India to Borneo, Philippines?, Celebes, Talaud, Morotai, Lesser Sunda Islands and Micronesia.

Cleistanthus megacarpus C. B. Rob., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 6, 1911, 232.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, swamp, alt. 60 m, June 25: *n. 3607* (shrub, 1 m).

Distribution: Borneo, Philippines (Mindoro, Sibuyan, Negros, Samar, Mindanao), Morotai.

Cleistanthus myrianthus (Hassk.) Kurz, For. Fl. Burma 2, 1877, 370.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 8: *n. 2900* (tree, 15 m, fr. dirty green; nat. n.: *pilápi*); Pasir Malap, alt. 60 m, frequent, May 13: *n. 2980* (tree, 11 m, fr. green; nat. n.: *áloe rámoet'a*) — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, frequent in old forest, alt. 100 m, June 3: *n. 3337* (tree, 14 m, fr. reddish green; nat. n.: *rámoet'a*).

Distribution: Burma to Philippines and New Guinea.

Codiaeum variegatum (L.) Bl., Bijdr. 1825, 606.

Var. α moluccanum (Decne.) Muell.-Arg. in DC., Prodr. 15, 1866, 1119.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, 200 m alt., frequent, May 2: *n. 2888* (small tree, 1.3 m, fr. brown); Pasir Malap, old forest, alt. 50 m, frequent, May 13: *n. 2993*

(tree, 2 m, infl. and flow. creamy white); alt. 40 m, May 14: *n. 3013* (flow. greenish white; nat. n.: **tolendsoe*).

Distribution of the wild var. (var. β *pictum* is cultivated) not exactly known; probably wild in Fiji, N. Australia, Bismarck Archipelago, New Guinea, Moluccas, Talaud (!), Celebes and the Lesser Sunda Islands. Records from other places are less trustworthy. According to Merrill (Enum. Phil. Flow. Pl. 2, 1923, 454) the species is not wild in the Philippines.

Croton argyratus Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 602.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 7: *n. 2872* (tree, 7 m, lvs. almost white below, flow. white; nat. n.: **binoenga'mbabi*).

Distribution: Burma to Philippines, Talaud and Ceram.

Croton laevifolius Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 603.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, in forest, alt. 300 m, May 31: *n. 3277* (tree, 8 m, flow l. green).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula to Philippines and New Guinea.

Cyclostemon ?littoralis C. B. Rob., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 3, 1908, 198.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, Pasir Malap, frequent in old forest, alt. 40 m, May 13: *n. 2984* (tree, 13 m; nat. n.: *tabóéroh*).

Distribution: Philippines, Talaud.

Cyclostemon Minahassae Boerl. & Koord. in Koorders, Med. 's Lands Plantent. 19, 1898, 590.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, steep slope, alt. 80 m, May 5: *n. 2840* (tree, 15 m; nat. n.: *mamántoe*).

Distribution: Java, Borneo, Celebes, Talaud.

Endospermum formicarum Becc., Malesia 2, 1884, 44.

Morotai, Loc. 12, bank of K. Goegoeti, alt. 40 m, frequent, June 21: *n. 3495* (straight tree, 20 m high, bole 15 m, diam. 0.30—0.15 m, branchlets hollow, inhabited by ants, lvs. green, nerves paler, fr. l. green; nat. n.: *péa-péa*).

Distribution: Morotai, New Guinea, Bismarck Archipelago.

Euphorbia Atoto Forst. f., Prodr., 1786, 207.

Miangas, Loc. 9, P. Baronto, alt. 7 m, frequent, June 11: *n. 3374* (undershrub, l. green, infl. green; nat. n.: **pampóéloe*).

Distribution: S.E. Asia to Australia and Polynesia.

Euphorbia serrulata Reinw. ex Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 635.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, Noesa Maraloem, between alang-alang, alt. 5 m, May 16: *n. 3036* (herb, stems reddish, glands of cyathia white, fr. red; nat. n.: **pampóéloet'a*).

Distribution: S. China to Australia and Polynesia; the hairy form (this specimen) is known from E. Java, Madoera, Kangean, Lesser Sunda Islands, Talaud and New Guinea.

Excoecaria Agallocha L., Syst., ed. 10, 1759, 1288.

Miangas, Loc. 9, P. Baronto, limestone rocks, alt. 7 m, June 11: *n. 3371* (shrub, ± 2 m high, branchlets brown, lvs. coriaceous, shining d. green above, l. green below, petioles greenish white, infl. l. green, filaments greenish white, anthers yellow; nat. n.: *lári*).

Distribution: S.E. Asia to Polynesia.

Glochidion philippicum (Cav.) C. B. Rob., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 4, 1909, 103.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, riverbank, alt. 50 m, May 1: *n. 2730* (tree, 20 m, flow. l. yellowish green, wood very hard, bark black).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Celebes, Philippines, Formosa, Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea.

Glochidion rubrum Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 586.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open slope, alt. 400 m, May 31: *n. 3269* (small tree, 4 m).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Kangean, Borneo, Philippines, Talaud.

Glochidion zeylanicum (Gaertn.) Juss., Tent. Euph., 1824, 107.

Var. **malayanum** J. J. Smith in Koorders et Valeton, Bijdr. Booms. Java 12, 1910, 118.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, frequent, April 24: *n. 2529* (tree, 5—8 m,

flow. l. green; nat. n.: *bánah*) — Loc. 2, riverbank, alt. 50 m, May 3: *n. 2784* (tree, 10 m, young lvs. red, flow. l. yellow, fr. yellow and red like a peach; nat. n.: *bánah*) — Nenoesa, Loc. 10, Merampi, sec. forest, alt. 130 m, frequent; June 13: *n. 3450* (flow. yellowish green).

Distribution of the species: India to Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas? Australia?, of the variety: Sumatra, Java, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Ambon?, Australia?

Homalanthus populneus (Geisel.) Pax in Engl. & Prantl, Nat. Pflanzenf. 3, pt. 5, 1890, 96.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 100 m, April 24: *n. 2542* (small tree, 4 m high, lvs. l. green, old lvs. wine-red, infl. l. green; nat. n.: *peránti*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula to Philippines and New Guinea.

Macaranga hispida (Bl.) Muell.-Arg. in DC., Prodr. 15, 1866, 990.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 80 m, April 24: *n. 2527* (small tree, ± 4 m high, bole straight, 2 m, resin sticky, reddish brown, bark d. green, infl. l. yellowish green, corolla l. greenish yellow, filaments white translucent, anthers l. brown; nat. n.: *míndang'a*) — Loc. 2, very frequent in forest on riverbank, alt. 50 m, May 1: *n. 2727* (tree, 26 m high, bole 19.8 m, diam. 0.43—0.20 m, bark greenish grey, lvs. d. green shining above, paler and dull below, nerves l. green, fr. l. green, seeds shining black; nat. n.: *míndang'a*).

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, riverbank, alt. 20 m, frequent, June 29: *n. 3666* (strongly branched tree, ± 10 m high, lvs. bright green, dull l. green below, petioles and twigs slightly bluish, fr. l. green; nat. n.: *kitòjer*).

Distribution: Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea.

Macaranga Mappa (L.) Muell.-Arg. in DC., Prodr. 15, pt. 2, 1866, 1000.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, Pananasaran'a, open forest, alt. 300 m, June 1: *n. 3299* (tree, 11 m high, bole 9 m, diam. 0.15—0.08 m, trunk straight, cylindrical, gum blood-red, lvs. d. green, with l. yellowish green nerves, fr. l. green; nat. n.: *bináwin'a*).

Distribution: Celebes, ? Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas.

Macaranga Tanarius (L.) Muell.-Arg. in DC., Prodr. 15, 1866, 997.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 90 m, April 24: *n. 2531* (small straight tree, 6 m high, young twigs bluish by wax, lvs. green, with yellowish green nerves above, slightly pale bluish green below, bracts l. greenish yellow; nat. n.: *binóéng'a*).

Distribution: S. China and Malay Peninsula to Formosa, Philippines, New Guinea and North Australia.

Macaranga ?triloba (Bl.) Muell.-Arg. in DC., Prodr. 15, 1866, 989.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, old forest, alt. 320 m, frequent, May 23: *n. 3127* (tree, 16 m; nat. n.: *lawéang'a*; used for house and proa construction).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Palawan, Talaud.

Mallotus ricinoides (Pers.) Muell.-Arg., Linnaea 34, 1865, 187.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 100 m, April 27: *n. 2645* (small tree, ± 2.5 m high, lvs. l. green, petioles and nerves below very pale, style brown, fr. very l. greenish yellow; nat. n.: *laransiàn'a *oeróéne*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula to Philippines, New Guinea and N. Australia.

Mallotus tiliifolius (Bl.) Muell.-Arg., Linnaea 34, 1865, 190.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 10 m, June 5: *n. 3351* (shrub, 1.5 m, infl. l. yellowish green, fr. l. green; nat. n.: *lendeh*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula and Formosa to Polynesia.

Melanolepis multiglandulosa (Reinw.) Reich. f. & Zoll., Linnaea 28, 1856, 324.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 80 m, April 24: *n. 2546* (small straight tree, ± 3 m high, lvs. bright green, calyx d. brown pubescent, corolla brown pubescent, fr. green, brown pubescent; nat. n.: *maràm'a*) — Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, sec. forest, alt. 20 m, May 26: *n. 3184* (widely branched shrub, ± 4 m high, peduncle and calyx brownish green, stigma yellowish green, ovary brownish green, fr. bright green; nat. n.: *naràm'a*) — Nenoesa, Loc. 10, Merampi, G. Maranggi, sec. forest, alt. 130 m, June 13: *n. 3418* (small tree, ± 3 m high, lvs. as in n. 3361, calyx and pedicels brownish green, stigma pale brown, fr. green; nat. n.: *náran*) — Miangas, Loc. 9, G. Batoe, small grove, alt. 70 m, June 11: *n. 3361* (small tree, ± 6 m high, lvs. d. green, paler below, nerves and petioles l. green, stigma greenish brown, ovary green; nat. n.: *nára*).

Distribution: India and China to Formosa and Polynesia.

Pimeleodendron amboinicum (Miq.) Hassk., Versl. Meded. Kon. Akad. Wet. 4, 1855, 140.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, partly cleared old forest, alt. 100 m, April 26: *n. 2614* (tree, 15 m high, bole 5 m, diam. 0.20 m, bark white like that of a birch, with large l. brown spots, bast with yellow gum, calyx and ovary green, stigma yellowish green; nat. n.: *améad'a*) — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, frequent in old forest, alt. 100 m, June 3: *n. 3335* (tree, 11 m high, bole 6 m, diam. 0.30—0.23 m, trunk straight, cylindrical, lvs. shining d. green above, paler below, fr. greenish yellow, more yellow with age; nat. n.: *alóéba*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, frequent in old forest, alt. 320 m, May 20: *n. 3043* (tree, 11 m high, bole 4 m, diam. 0.12—0.09 m, trunk straight, cylindrical, white, lvs. as in n. 3335, midrib paler, petioles green or brownish, milky-juice little, white, thick and sticky, fr. pale green, with d. brown tip; nat. n.: *malalá'a*).

Distribution: Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea.

Phyllanthus lamprophyllus Muell.-Arg. in DC., Prodr. 15, 1866, 324.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, very frequent, alt. 400 m, May 31: *n. 3279* (densely branched shrub, more lax when growing in shade, lvs. l. green, shining above, corolla greenish white, often slightly red, style and stigma pale yellowish green, fr. l. green or greenish white).

Distribution: Java, Celebes, Palawan, Talaud, Moluccas, Timor, New Guinea.

ANACARDIACEAE

Buchanania amboinensis Miq., Ann. Mus. Bot. Lugd.-Bat. 4, 1868—1869, 117.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 50 m, June 22: *n. 3537* (tree, 15 m, fr. l. green; nat. n.: *litòko*).

Distribution: N. Celebes, Moluccas, Aroe Islands.

Buchanania arborescens Bl., Mus. Lugd.-Bat. 1, 1850, 183.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 40 m, June 23: *n. 3577* (tree, 20 m,

flow. white; nat. n.: *marísin karéa'a*); cleared old forest, alt. 100 m, April 26: *n. 2617* (tree, 34 m, flow. white, fr. green; nat. n.: *taniroeàn'a*) — Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 200 m, May 9: *n. 2920* (tree, 16 m; nat. n. as n. 2577) — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open forest, alt. 350 m, June 1: *n. 3292* (tree, 11 m, gum white, sticky; nat. n. as n. 2577) — Nenoesa, Loc. 11, Garete, frequent in cleared forest on limestone, alt. 3 m, June 14: *n. 3441* (tree, 9 m, flow. white; nat. n. as n. 2577).

Distribution: Burma to Soemba, Celebes, Philippines and Talaud.

Campnosperma ?oxyrhachis (Miq.) Engl. in A. DC., Mon. Phan. 4, 1883, 319.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, very frequent in old forest, alt. 40 m, May 3: *n. 2769* (tree, 22 m; nat. n.: *taniroeàn'a*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Talaud.

Dracontomelum dao (Blco.) Merr. & Rolfe, Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 3, 1908, 108.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, Pasir Malap, old forest, alt. 25 m, May 14: *n. 3008* (tree, 21 m, flow. white; nat. n.: **lèo'mbáwi*).

Morotai, Loc. 12, on gravelbank in river, alt. 40 m, June 16: *n. 3617* (tree, 20 m; nat. n.: *bemagiohiki*); Marilako, old forest, alt. 20 m, frequent, June 29: *n. 3664* (tree, 30 m, buttresses 4 m high, 3 m spreading, flow. greenish white; nat. n.: *ngámin*).

Distribution: Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas.

Koordersiodendron pinnatum (Blco.) Merr., Phil. Bur. For. Bull. 1, 1903, 33.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, riverbank, alt. 40 m, May 11: *n. 2944* (tree, 23 m; nat. n.: *boewis'a*; heartwood in demand for house construction) — Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, Tonana forest reserve, cleared forest, alt. 25 m, frequent, May 26: *n. 3177* (tree, 18 m; same nat. n. and use as n. 2944).

Distribution: Borneo, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea.

Rhus rufa Teijsm. & Binn., Nat. Tijdschr. N. I. 27, 1863, 52.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 100 m, April 25: *n. 2572* (tree, 10 m, fr. black; nat. n.: *nanítoe*).

Distribution: Java, Celebes, Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea, Australia.

AQUIFOLIACEAE

Ilex ?paucinervia Merr., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 17, 1920, 274.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, alt. 300 m, May 31: *n. 3257* (shrub, 2 m high, branchlets grey, lvs. coriaceous, yellowish green, pedicels, calyx and fr. l. green).

Distribution: Talaud, Philippines (Luzon).

Remarks: The specimen agrees with Merrill's description but for the upper surface of the leaf, which is not pitted, but glabrous and shining and slightly wrinkled when dry. The base of the leaf, though mostly acute, is sometimes rounded. The leaves measure 2.6—4.8 × 1.3—2.3 cm. For lack of material for comparison we could not identify the specimen with certainty.

CELASTRACEAE

Euonymus javanicus Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 1146.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 25: *n. 3169* (tree, 19 m high, bole 9 m, diam. 0.22—0.16 m, trunk straight, cylindrical, l. grey, lvs. shining on both sides, d. green above, l. green below, calyx in fr. brown, pedicels green, fr. shining green; wood used for house construction; nat. n.: *ligisàt'a*).

Distribution: Burma and Malay Peninsula to Philippines and Moluccas.

HIPPOCRATEACEAE

Hippocratea oblongifolia Roxb., Fl. Ind., ed. 1, 1, 1820, 170.

Nenoesa, Loc. 11, Garete, cleared forest on limestone, alt. 5 m, June 14: *n. 3448* (liana, branchlets l. greyish brown, lvs. d. green, calyx and corolla dull green, stigma yellow, ovary green; nat. n.: *poendángi*).

Distribution: India to Philippines and Australia.

STAPHYLEACEAE

Turpinia pomifera (Roxb.) DC., Prodr. 2, 1825, 3.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 70 m, May 6: *n. 2855* (tree, 23 m high, bole 11.2 m, diam. 0.37—0.23 m, trunk straight, l. brown, branchlets brown, lvs. shining d. green above, l. green below, petioles, fr. and pedicels l. green; nat. n.: *lampàsia*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 260 m, May 23: *n. 3129* (tree, ± 20 m high, trunk not straight, fr. dirty green).

Distribution: India, China, Malay Peninsula, Formosa, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas (Ambon).

ICACINACEAE

Gomphandra australiana F. Muell., Fragm. 6, pt. 3, 1867—1868, 253.
Var. **celebica** Valeton in Koorders, Med. 's Lands Plantent. 19, 1898, 392.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 60 m, June 21: *n. 3498* (tree, 10 m, fr. greenish white to white; nat. n.: *mòdor*).

Distribution of the variety: Celebes, Talaud; of the species: Celebes, Talaud, New Guinea, Australia.

Gomphandra ?javanica (Miq.) Val., Crit. Overz. Olacin., 1886, 217.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 100 m, May 5: *n. 2847* (tree, 16 m, fr. shining greenish white; nat. n.: *anóéwoek'a*).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Talaud.

Iodes philippinensis Merr., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 3, 1908, 241.

Kaboeroeang, Loc. 5, forest skirt, alt. 130 m, May 27: *n. 3211* (twining, flow. white).

Distribution: Borneo, Philippines, Talaud.

Iodes ovalis Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 30.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 50 m, May 3: *n. 2807* (long liana, flow. greenish white).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea.

Lophopyxis Maingayi Hook. f., Icon. Plant., 1887, t. 1714; Hook. f., Fl. Br. Ind. 5, 1890, 476; Boerl., Handl. Fl. Ned. Ind. 1, 1890, 673; Pax in Engl.-Prantl, Nat. Pflanzenf. 3, pt. 5, 1890, 117; Engl. in Engl.-Prantl, Nat. Pflanzenf. 3, pt. 5, 1893, 257; Hall. f., Meded. 's Rijks Herb. 1, 1910, 9; Ridl., Fl. Mal. Pen. 1, 1922, p. 435 — *Combretopsis pentaptera* K. Schum., Fl. Kais. Wilh. Land, 1889, 69 — *Treubia combretocarpa* Pierre in Boerl., Handl. Fl. Ned. Ind. 1, 1890, 445 — *Lophopyxis Pierrei* Boerl., Handl. Fl. Ned. Ind. 1, 1890, 673; Hall. f., Meded. 's Rijks Herb. 1, 1910, 9 — *L. Schumannii* Boerl., Handl. Fl. Ned. Ind. 1, 1890, 674; Hall. f., Meded. 's Rijks Herb. 1, 1910, 9 — *L. combretocarpa* Engl. in Engl.-Prantl, Nat. Pflanzenf. 3, pt. 5, 1893, 257 — *L. pentaptera* Engl., Sitz.ber. Kön. Preuss. Akad. Wiss., 1893, 265, t. 2, fig. 6, 7; Engl. in Engl.-Prantl, Nat. Pflanzenf.

3, pt. 5, 1893, 257; Schum., Notizbl. Kön. bot. Gart. Mus. Berl. 2, 1898, 130; Schum. & Laut., Fl. Deutsche Schutzgeb. Südsee, 1901, 418; Gilg, Engl. Bot. Jahrb. 55, 1918, 278; Schellenb., Engl. Bot. Jahrb. 58, 1923, 177; Kanehira, Bot. Mag. Tokyo 45, 1931, 293; Kanehira, Fl. Micrones., 1933, 197, fig. 84; Kanehira, Journ. Dept. Agric. Kyushu Imp. Univ. 4, 1935, 358 — *Homalium Gilgianum* Laut., Nachtr. Fl. Deutsche Schutzgeb. Südsee, 1905, 320; Pulle, Nova Guinea 8, 1911, 672; Van Slooten, Bijdr. Combret. Flacourt. Ned. Ind., 1919, 117, 166; Van Slooten, Nova Guinea 14, 1924, 194.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, Pasir Malap, bank of K. Bahewa, alt. 20 m, frequent, May 14: *n. 3014* (liana, several m long, branchlets brown, lvs. bright green, peduncles and calyx l. green, filaments white, anthers brownish white, stigma white, ovary greenish white, young fr. l. green; nat. n.: *tabóéroe*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula (Perak, Malacca), Talaud, Moluccas (Ceram, Ambon), Micronesia (Palau), S.W. New Guinea (along the Lorentzriver = Noordriver), N.E. New Guinea (Torricelli mountains; Gogolriver; near Constantinhafen; Cape Arcona, Huon Gulf), New Britain and probably New Ireland. Gilg (1918) mentioned a specimen collected by Peekel, but did not give the locality; probably this specimen came from New Ireland, since Peekel collected most of his material there.

Remarks: Formerly this remarkable genus was supposed to consist of three species, viz. *L. Maingayi* Hook f. from the Malay Peninsula, *L. pentaptera* (K. Schum.) Engl. from the Moluccas, Micronesia and New Guinea, and *L. combretocarpa* (Pierre) Engl. from Ceram. On comparing these three species we could not find any sufficient differences to keep them separate.

The type material of *L. combretocarpa*, which ought to be in the Rijksherbarium (vid. Boerlage, 1890 and Hallier, 1910) could not be traced there any longer; only the drawing by Pierre, mentioned by Boerlage (p. 446) was at our disposal (cf. *Fig. 7*; the specific name has erroneously been spelled *combreticarpa*). Boerlage (p. 674) states as differences between *L. Schumannii* (= *L. pentaptera*) and *L. Pierrei* (= *L. combretocarpa*), that in *L. Pierrei* the fruits are smaller and the tendrils absent. In Pierre's drawing the fruit measures 2.4 cm in natural size. Schumann gives as the size of the fruits of his specimen 2.5—3.5 cm. This difference seems to small to be of much importance, the more so as it is not certain that the fruits of Pierre's specimen were fully ripe. As to the second point, the presence or absence of tendrils, this is certainly not a character to base a specific difference upon. In the material from Talaud, for instance, there are eight branches bearing inflorescences, seven of which possessed no tendrils at all, the eight being provided with two kinds of tendrils, namely, axillary branches metamorphosed into strong tendrils, which are rolled up only at the end, often bearing a bud, and bracts at the base of the inflorescences metamorphosed into weak flat tendrils, which are curved over their whole length and are probably without function [1]).

[1]) These two kinds of tendrils are also apparent in Hooker's figure.

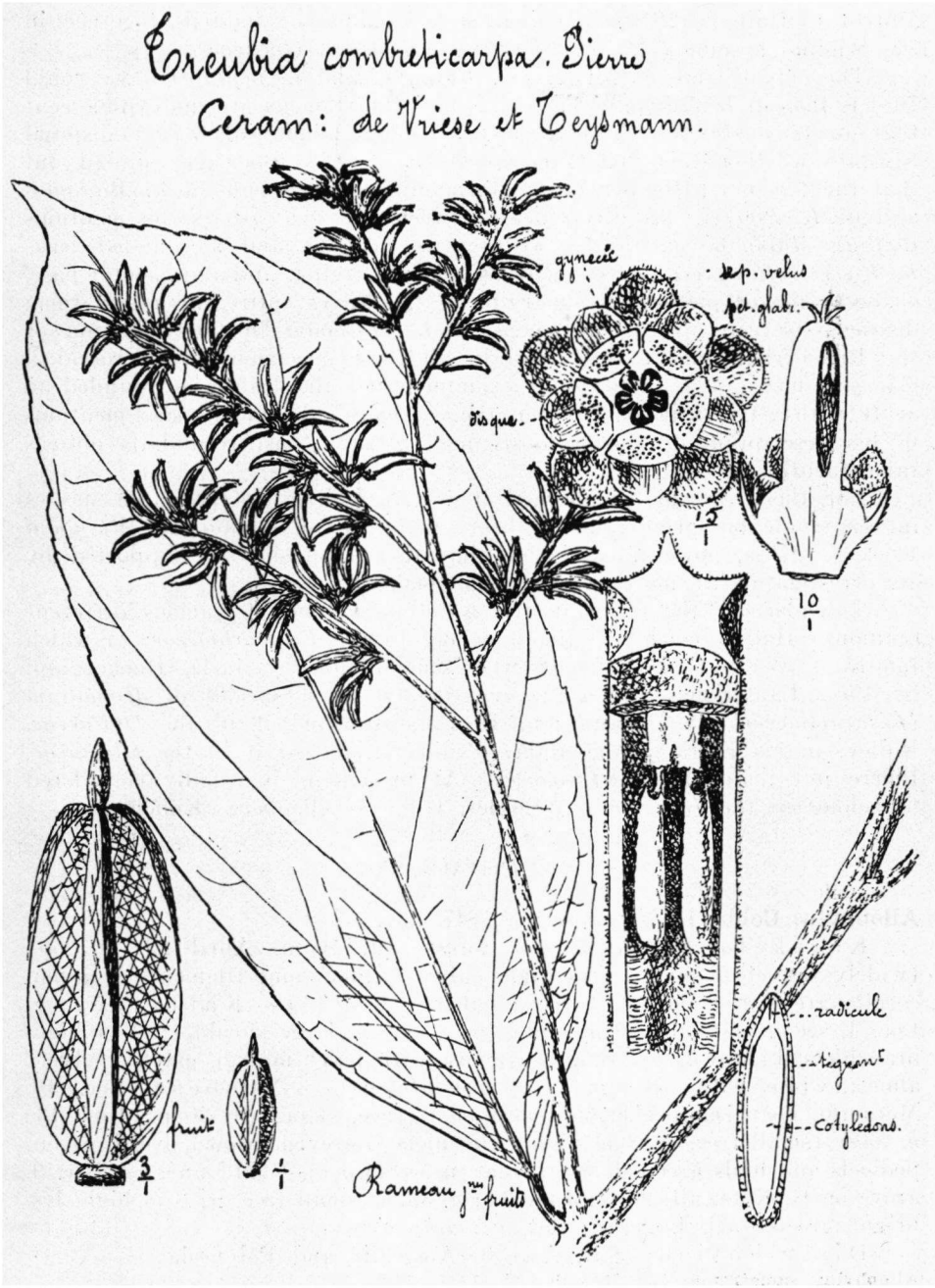


Fig. 7 — *Lophopyxis Maingayi* Hook. f. — about 5/6 the size of the original reproduction of Pierre's plate, extant in the Rijksherbarium.

Moreover, Hallier (1910) stated these two kinds of tendrils together in the original specimens of *L. Pierrei* (= *L. combretocarpa*)!

The only difference between *L. Maingayi* and *L. pentaptera* we could find is that in *L. Maingayi* the petals and the stamens are more pubescent than in *L. pentaptera*, but we had not enough material at our disposal to state whether this difference is constant. Also Boerlage pointed out that there is no difference in the form of the gynaeceum of *L. Maingayi* and of *L. Pierrei*. As differences between the two species, he mentions that *L. Maingayi* has leaves with entire margins and a rounded base, *L. Pierrei*, however, leaves with serrate margins and an acute base. Though Hooker pictures the margins of the leaves entire, we found them distinctly serrate in the specimens of *L. Maingayi* in the collection of the Rijksherbarium, the leaf-bases in all these specimens being rounded. The specimens of *L. pentaptera* examined had the leaf-bases rounded to acute with all transitions between the extremes. Schumann also mentions in his description of *Combretopsis pentaptera*: "basi rotundatis obtusis rarius acutis".

For these reasons we deemed it justified to unite the three species into a single one which has to bear the name of *Lophopyxis Maingayi* Hook f. It is, however, desirable that this conclusion be supported by an investigation of more complete material.

The place of the genus in the system is subject to various different opinions. Hallier considered it to belong to the *Euphorbiaceae*, to which family it was put also, though with some doubt, by J. D. Hooker and by Pax; Lauterbach and Pulle regarded it as a species of *Homalium* (*Flacourtiaceae*); Schumann and Boerlage inserted it in the *Olacaceae*, Ridley, in his Flora of the Malay Peninsula, placed it in the *Olacineae*, Pierre put it to the *Saxifragaceae*. At present it is usually considered to belong to the *Icacinaceae* (Engler, Gilg, Schellenberg, Kanehira).

SAPINDACEAE

Allophylus Cobbe Bl., Rumphia 3, 1847, 131.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 10 m, April 23: *n. 2505* (widely branched shrub, 4 m high, calyx, anthers and filaments l. green, corolla greenish yellow, fr. green; nat. n.: *dàrat'a*) — Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, sec. forest, alt. 10 m, May 26: *n. 3182* (large shrub, ± 4 m high, branchlets d. brown, lvs. d. green above with paler midrib, calyx l. green, almost white with age; nat. n.: *ararintok'a*) — Nenoesa, Loc. 10, Merampi, near Dampoelis, on limestone terrace, slope, alt. 30 m, June 13: *n. 3428* (small tree, ± 3 m high, branchlets l. greyish brown, lvs. l. green, pedicels and buds greenish white; nat. n.: *arámpoe*) — Miangas, Loc. 9, grove on G. Kota, alt. 90 m, June 11: *n. 3378* (small tree, ± 3 m high, lvs. bright green, infl. l. green; nat. n.: *aràpoe*).

Distribution: S.E. Asia to Australia and Polynesia.

Allophylus sumatranus Bl., Rumphia 3, 1847, 132.

Morotai, Loc. 12, riverbank, alt. 40 m, June 26: *n. 3627* (small tree, 4 m; nat. n.: *tioa*); old forest, alt. 10 m, fairly frequent, June 30: *n. 3680* (shrub, fr. red).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Moluccas (Obi, Batjan, Morotai).

Harpullia cupanioides Roxb., Fl. Ind., ed. 2, 1, 1832, 645.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, alt. 20 m, old forest, June 28: *n. 3656* (small tree, 1.5 m, cauliflorous, flow. white).

Distribution: India and S. China to Philippines and New Guinea.

Jagera serrata (Roxb.) Radlk., Sitz. Ber. Math.-Phys. Ac. Münch. 8, 1878, 303.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, old forest, alt. 20 m, June 29: *n. 3674* (tree, 10 m, flow. yellowish white; nat. n.: *hokaróéboe*).

Distribution: Moluccas (Ambon, Ceram, Boeroe, Morotai).

Otophora fruticosa (Roxb.) Bl., Rumphia 3, 1847, 142.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, Pasir Malap, old forest, alt. 30 m, May 13: *n. 2981* (small tree, 3 m, fr. yellowish red).

Distribution: Siam to Philippines and Moluccas.

Pometia pinnata Forst., Char. Gen., 1776, 109, t. 55.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 70 m, frequent, May 6: *n. 2852* (tree, 23 m, buttresses 3 m, young lvs. red; nat. n.: *lóétoet'a*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula to Polynesia.

Pometia tomentosa (Bl.) Teijsm. & Binn., Cat. Hort. Bog., 1886, 214.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, old forest, alt. 260 m, May 23: *n. 3128* (lofty tree, 30 m; nat. n.: *lèo*; wood used for proa construction).

Distribution: Java, Borneo, Philippines, Talaud, Ambon, Timor.

RHAMNACEAE

Alphitonia zizyphoides (Spreng.) A. Gray, U. S. Expl. Exp. Bot., 1854, 278.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, partly cleared old forest, alt. 120 m, April 27: *n. 2651* (tree, 17 m high, bole 14.5 m, diam. 0.19—0.09 m, trunk slightly curved, bark greenish brown, spotted, lvs. d. green above, almost white below, with l. greenish brown nerves; nat. n.: **tóleh*) — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, alt. 400 m, May 31: *n. 3276* (small tree, 3 m high, trunk greyish white, lvs. shining d. green above, very l. green with darker nerves and l. yellowish green midrib below, pedicels and calyx ferruginously pubescent, corolla, stamens and gynaeceum greenish white, fr. d. brown, seeds d. red) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, very frequent in old forest, alt. 250 m, May 22: *n. 3102* (tree, 23 m high, bole 18 m, diam. 0.30—0.20 m, bark greyish brown, bast red, fr. black, with red pericarp; nat. n.: **tóleh*).

Distribution: Borneo, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea, Australia, Polynesia.

Colubrina asiatica (L.) Brongn., Ann. Sci. Nat. Bot., Sér. I, 10, 1827, 369.

Miangas, Loc. 9, beach, frequent, alt. 2 m, June 12: *n. 3402* (shrub, more or less climbing, ± 3 m high, lvs. shining d. green above, pedicels, calyx and fr. green; nat. n.: *angkaráha*).

Distribution: paleotropic.

VITACEAE

Cissus hastata (Miq.) Planch. in A. DC., Mon. Phan. 5, 1887, 502.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, cleared old forest, alt. 30 m, April 25: *n. 2603* (long liana, fr. dirty brownish red with bright red pedicels; nat. n.: *apobóéroe'a*) — Loc. 2, riverbank, alt. 50 m, May 2: *n. 2743* (liana, flow. red and yellow, fr. dirty red).

Distribution: Indo China and Malay Peninsula to Celebes, Philippines and Talaud.

Cissus nodosa Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 182.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, frequent along riverbank, alt. 40 m, May 12: *n. 2970* (climbing, ± 5 m long, fr. green; nat. n.: *landèrong*).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Talaud.

Columella corniculata (Benth.) Merr., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 11, 1916, 133.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, N. Maraloem, alt. 5 m, May 16: *n. 3038* (climbing, flow. greenish white; nat. n.: *aoerita*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, skirt of sec. forest, alt. 100 m, May 12: *n. 3054* (entire plant l. green).

Distribution: S. China, Formosa, Philippines, Talaud.

Leea ?aculeata Bl., Bijdr. 1825, 197.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, very frequent along riverbank, alt. 50 m, May 1: *n. 2729* (overhanging tree, 3 m, flow. l. green, young fr. dull dirty green; nat. n.: *mamáli*).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas.

Leea acuminata Clarke, Journ. Bot. 19, 1881. 102.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, frequent in sec. forest, alt. 100 m, May 21: *n. 3074* (small tree, 7 m, infl. red, flow. buds greenish; nat. n.: *mamáli *wawine*) — Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, very frequent in sec. forest, alt. 10 m, May 26: *n. 3183* (small tree, 5 m; nat. n.: *mamáli *ésak'a*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Talaud, Moluccas.

Leea indica (Burm. f.) Merr., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 14, 1919, 245.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, frequent in old forest, alt. 20 m, June 29: *n. 3667* (large shrub, 6 m, flow. l. green, fr. dirty violet; nat. n.: *ngetéda*).

Distribution: India, S. China, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas.

Leea javanica Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 197.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 75 m, April 24: *n. 2539* (shrub, 2.5 m, flow. yellowish white; nat. n.: *mamáli*); in coconut plantation, alt. 100 m, April 25: *n. 2579* (shrub, 2 m, fr. pink; same nat. n. as n. 2539).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, New Guinea.

ELAEOCARPACEAE

Elaeocarpus ?dolichostylus Schlecht., Engl. Jahrb. 54, 1916, 125.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, cleared old forest, alt. 100 m, very frequent, April 26: *n. 2611* (tree, 25 m, old leaves red, fr. green; nat. n.: *antoála*; wood used for house construction).

Distribution: New Guinea, Talaud.

Elaeocarpus Ganitrus Roxb., Fl. Ind. ed. 2, 2, 1832, 592.

Morotai, Loc. 12, riverbank, alt. 25 m, frequent, June 27: *n. 3632* (tree, 20 m, fr. blue; nat. n.: *máleh-máleh*).

Distribution: Siam to New Caledonia (not in Philippines).

Elaeocarpus ?gigantifolius Elm., Leafl. Phil. Bot. 4, 1911, 1182.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 100 m, June 21: *n. 3507* (small tree, 6 m, flow. l. pink, fetid [carrion odour]).

Distribution: Philippines (Leyte, Mindanao), Morotai.

Elaeocarpus multiflorus (Turcz.) F.-Vill., Noviss. App., 1880, 31.

Nenoesa, Loc. 11, Garete, cleared forest, alt. 5 m, June 14: *n. 3444* (tree, 16 m, flow. white; nat. n.: *antoála*; wood used for proa construction).

Distribution: N. Celebes, Philippines, Talaud.

TILIACEAE

Brownlowia Beccarii (Mast.) Pierre, Fl. For. Cochinch., 1888, sub. t. 130.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, high mangrove forest, alt. 1 m, April 23: *n. 2491* (shrub, lvs. d. green above, dull brownish green below, fr. dull greenish brown).

Distribution: Borneo, Celebes, Talaud.

Colona scabra (Sm.) Burrett, Notizbl. Bot. Gart. Berlin 9, 1926, 729, 800.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, bank of K. Bahewa, alt. 20 m, May 16: *n. 3033* (tree, 11 m high, bole 4 m, diam. 0.20—0.11 m, trunk curved, greyish brown, lvs. d. green above, l. green below, l. ferruginously pubes-

cent, calyx and pedicel greenish, ferruginously pubescent, corolla dirty pink, filaments l. yellowish red, anthers very d. red, fr. dull greyish brown; wood used for house construction; nat. n.: *anít'a*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, sec. forest, alt. 150 m, May 20: *n. 3044* (tree, 13 m high, bole 6 m, diam. 0.30—0.24 m, fr. dirty brownish green; nat. n.: *anít'a*); south of Liroeng, very frequent in cleared old forest, alt. 100 m, May 21: *n. 3076* (tree, 18.4 m high, bole 10.2 m, 0.44—0.30 m, trunk straight, knobby; further same annotations as n. 3033, but filaments d. red, pink at base, anthers yellow, margins and connective d. red, style greenish white, stigma l. pink, ovary l. green, fr. dirty greenish red; nat. n.: *anít'a*).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud, Moluccas.

Colona serratifolia Cav., Ic. 4, 1797, 47, t. 370.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 200 m, June 23: *n. 3566* (tree, 17 m high, bole 6 m, diam. 0.35—0.30 m, trunk curved, d. greenish grey, lvs. ± shining d. green above, dull pale green below, nerves l. brown, calyx dirty yellowish red without, red with dirty yellowish red margins within, corolla yellow and red, filaments l. yellow, anthers yellow, margins d. red; bast used for the construction of "paloedi" baskets used for carrying gum copal; nat. n.: *gibakolàno*).

Distribution: Borneo, Philippines, Celebes, Morotai.

Corchorus acutangulus Lam., Enc. Bot. 2, 1786, 104.

Karakelong, Loc. 8, north. of Poeloetan, wayside, alt. 5 m, June 4: *n. 3344* (herb or undershrub, branchlets spreading, lvs. dull green, paler below, midrib greenish white below, petioles and branchlets reddish, calyx and pedicel reddish, corolla, stamens and stigma yellow, style yellowish green, ovary green; dogs, which are used for boar hunting are feeded with the flowers; a decoction of the leaves is used as a febrifuge; nat. n.: *loempánsit'a*).

Distribution: pantropic.

Grewia ceramensis Hochr., Pl. Bogor. Exsicc., 1904, 30.

Morotai, Loc. 12, G. Ligòjer near Goegoeti, old forest, alt. 60 m, June 24: *n. 3580* (tree, 15 m high, bole 9 m, diam. 0.33—0.25 m, trunk straight, cylindrical, lvs. d. green above, petioles brown, fr. l. green, persistent calyx and pedicels l. brown; nat. n.: *ngodóro*).

Distribution: Moluccas (Soela, Boeroe, Morotai, Ceram, Ambon).

Trichospermum eriopodum (Turcz.) Merr., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 11, 1916, 17.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, Pasir Malap, old forest, alt. 40 m, May 13: *n. 2983* (tree, 14 m high, bole 9 m, diam. 0.25—0.19 m, trunk d. brown, lvs. dull green, l. dirty violet when young; nat. n.: *siàpoe*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 22: *n. 3105* (tree, 17 m high, bole 12 m, diam. 0.17—0.09 m, trunk curved, bark l. grey, bracts l. green, calyx ferruginously pubescent, pedicels greenish brown, corolla dull d. violet, filaments l. greenish yellow, anthers yellowish brown; strips of the bast are used for binding purposes; nat. n.: *siàpoe*).

Distribution: Philippines, Talaud.

Triumfetta procumbens Forst. f., Prodr., 1786, p. 35.

Miangas, Loc. 9, beach, alt. 1 m, June 11: *n. 3366* (creeping shrub, lvs. l. green, calyx l. greenish yellow, corolla and stamens bright yellow,

style and stigma yellow, fr. d. brown) — Nenoesa, Loc. 11, Garete, beach, June 14: *n. 3450* (creeping undershrub, same annotations, but fr. l. green; nat. n.: *anggaliára*).

Distribution: Seychelles to Polynesia.

MALVACEAE

Abelmoschus Manihot (L.) Médic., Malv., 1787, 46.

Forma **leptodactylus** Bakh. in Ochse, Ind. Groenten, 1931, 469, fig. 292.

Miangas, Loc. 9, cultivated: *n. 3364* (nat. n.: *nating'a* [Tal.] or *lóro* [Malay]; leaves are eaten boiled as vegetables).

Distribution: a native of China, now cultivated in all tropical countries.

Abelmoschus moschatus Médic., Malv., 1787, 46.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, wayside: *n. 2480* (erect shrub, 1.5 m, flow. reddish yellow, fr. green, slightly red; nat. n.: *dandí'it*).

Distribution: pantropic.

Hibiscus tiliaceus L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 694.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, very frequent along riverbank: *n. 3029* (curved tree, flow. yellowish red with d. violet centre; nat. n.: *bároe*; bast used for making ropes).

Distribution: pantropic.

STERCULIACEAE

Commersonia Bartramia (L.) Merr., Interpret. Herb. Amb., 1917, 362.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 100 m, very frequent, April 24: *n. 2525* (small tree, 2.5 m high, corolla white, stamens l. brown, stigma white, fr. l. green, brown with age; nat. n.: *sansoearàn*) — Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, sec. forest, May 26: *n. 3187* (large shrub, ± 4 m high, lvs. d. green above, l. green below, nerves ferruginously pubescent, corolla white, filaments white, anthers l. brown, stigma greenish white, fr. l. greenish brown; nat. n.: *sansoearàn'a*) — Miangas, Loc. 9, G. Soro, open grass-slope, alt. 50 m, June 11: *n. 3382* (small shrub, 0.5 m high, calyx dirty greyish green, corolla creamy white, stamens l. yellow, fr. dirty greyish green; nat. n.: *ansoeár'a*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula and S. China to Polynesia.

Kleinhovia hospita L., Sp. Pl., ed. 2, 1763, 1365.

Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, skirt of sec. forest, alt. 10 m, May 26: *n. 3188* (shrub, 2.5 m high, lvs. d. green above, paler below with greenish white nerves, calyx dirty pink, corolla pink, filaments l. yellow, anthers yellowish brown, fr. l. greenish brown; nat. n.: *andénak'a*).

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, old forest along river, alt. 20 m, frequent, June 28: *n. 3639* (tree, ± 10 m high, with dense foliage, calyx and corolla pink without, almost white within, tips of petals white, filaments white, red at top, anthers brownish white, fr. dirty l. greenish brown; nat. n.: *dédoro*).

Distribution: paleotropic.

Melochia concatenata L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 675.

Salebaboe, Loc. 6, Lota swamp near Moronge, alt. 5 m, May 28: *n. 3221* (herb or undershrub, lvs. dull green, calyx and bracts l. green, corolla pink, fr. l. green).

Distribution: pantropic.

Melochia umbellata (Houtt.) Stapf, Kew Bull., 1913, 317.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 30 m, April 25: *n. 2570* (small tree, 5 m high, lvs. l. green, nerves yellowish green, fr. dry, brown; nat. n.: *bambak'a*).

Distribution: Mascarenes and tropical Asia to Philippines, Moluccas, Lesser Sunda Islands and Polynesia.

Pterospermum celebicum Miq., Illustr. Fl. Arch. Ind., 1870, 87.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, Pasir Malap, old forest on riverbank, alt. 20 m, very frequent, May 14: *n. 3009* (tree, 25.6 m high, bole 20 m, diam. 0.60—0.30 m, trunk cylindrical, greyish brown, lvs. d. green above, l. brown with darker nerves below, pedicels brownish green, calyx brownish green without, white within, corolla white, filaments, style and stigma white, anthers very l. brown, fr. brown; nat. n.: *wáloek'a*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 250 m, frequent, May 22: *n. 3103* (tree, 27 m high, bole 20 m, diam. 0.32—0.20 m, trunk l. greyish brown, bast red, flow. slightly fragrant, buds d. brown, calyx greenish white; wood used for house and proa construction; nat .n.: *báloek'a*).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud.

Sterculia ceramica R. Br. in Benn., Pl. Jav. Rar., 1844, 233.

Nenoesa, Loc. 11, Garete, cleared forest on limestone, alt. 2 m, June 14: *n. 3443* (tree, 4 m high, bole 3 m, diam. 0.14—0.12 m, lvs. l. green, nerves at lower surface and petioles greenish white, flow. with pink galls; nat. n.: *lóéi*).

Distribution: Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas.

Sterculia comosa Wall., Pl. As. Rar. 2, 1831, 25, t. 127.

Miangas, Loc. 9, open grass slope, alt. 30 m, June 11: *n. 3362* (strongly curved branched tree, ± 6 m high, lvs. d. green, nerves and petioles l. yellowish green, peduncles l. green, pedicels red, calyx dirty violet red, fr. reddish; nat. n.: *lawéa*).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud, Ambon.

Remark: The specimen agrees with Wallich's figure, description and type specimens in all respects but for the lower surface of the leaf, which is not glaucescent tomentose but glabrous.

Sterculia Treubii Hochr., Bull. Inst. Bot. Buitenzorg 19, 1904, 20.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, partly cleared old forest, alt. 100 m, April 26: *n. 2624* (tree, 20 m high, bole 4 m, diam. 0.45 m, bark l. brown, wood with clear l. brown resin, lvs. bright green, nerves yellowish below, calyx l. greenish yellow, base red within, filaments l. green, anthers l. brown, fr. dull green; nat. n.: *amómas'a*) — Loc. 2, frequent in old forest, alt. 250 m, May 8: *n. 2905* (tree, 28 m high, bole 9 m, diam. 0.56—0.44 m, trunk straight, cylindrical, bark greyish green with white spots, lvs. bright green, shining above, lower surface and nerves paler, fr. green when young, red with age, up to 6-seeded; seeds are eaten roasted; nat. n.: *amómas'a*).

Distribution: Talaud, Ambon.

OCHNACEAE

Schuurmansia Theophrasta Hall. f., Rec. Trav. bot. néerl. 10, 1913, 347.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, frequent in old forest, alt. 100 m, May 11: *n. 2946*

(small tree, 7 m, young leaves d. brownish red, bud scales l. green; nat. n.: *arisóésoe *oeróéne*).

Distribution: Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea.

GUTTIFERAE

Calophyllum Inophyllum L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 513.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open slope, alt. 400 m, very frequent, May 31: *n. 3263* (curved tree, 6 m, fr. dull d. bluish violet, almost black; nat. n.: *bitáwak'a*).

Distribution: E. Africa to Polynesia.

Calophyllum soulattri Burm. f., Fl. Ind., 1768, 121.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 200 m, fairly frequent, May 10: *n. 2925* (tree, 28 m; nat. n.: *bitáwat'a*).

Morotai, Loc. 12, frequent in old forest, alt. 180 m, June 23: *n. 3567* (tree, 25 m, milky juice white, little; nat. n.: *fitáko*; trunk much in demand for ships' masts).

Distribution: Mascarenes to Philippines and Moluccas.

Garcinia cornea L. in Murr., Syst., ed. 13, 1774, 368.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open forest, alt. 300 m, June 2: *n. 3309* (tree, 10 m, milky juice white; nat. n.: *panggamóéil'a*).

Distribution: Mauritius, India and Siam to Borneo, Celebes, Talaud and Moluccas.

Garcinia Morella Desr. in Lam., Enc. Bot. 3, 1789, 701.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, very frequent in old forest, alt. 60 m, May 4: *n. 2826* (tree, 12.5 m, milky juice white, very sticky, fr. yellow with d. brown apex; nat. n.: *boelíta* or *boeríta*).

Distribution: India, Indo China, Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Philippines, Talaud.

Garcinia rhizophoroides Elm., Leafl. Phil. Bot. 3, 1911, 1049.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, low forest, alt. 500 m, June 1: *n. 3288* (small tree, 5 m, milky juice yellow, sticky, flow. yellowish green, fragrant; nat. n.: *boeríta*).

Distribution: Talaud, Philippines (Leyte, Sibuyan, Luzon).

Garcinia sizygifolia Pierre, Fl. For. Cochinch. 5, 1883, 26, pl. 77.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 80 m, April 25: *n. 2564* (tree, 7 m, milky juice yellow, very sticky, flow. fragrant; nat. n.: *boeríta*).

Distribution: Sumatra, Borneo, Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea.

Garcinia tetrandra Pierre, Fl. For. Cochinch. 1, 1889, 20, t. 94, fig. D.

Nenoesa, Loc. 10, Merampi, sec. forest, alt. 50 m, June 13: *n. 3426* (small tree, 6 m, flow. bright red, fr. edible; nat. n.: *la'tsi*).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud, Philippines.

DIPTEROCARPACEAE (D. F. van Slooten)

Anisoptera costata Korth., Verh. Nat. Gesch. Ned. Overz. Bez., Bot. 67, 1839—'42, tab. 6, fig. 1—9; Van Slooten, Bull. Jard. bot. Buit., Sér. III, 8, 1926, 7, fig. 1.

Morotai, Loc. 12, fairly frequent in old forest, alt. 130 m, June 22: *n. 3533* (lofty tree, 30 m high, bole 19 m, diam. 0.45—0.30 cm, trunk straight, cylindrical, branchlets greyish green, lvs. green, the nerves lighter; nat. n.: *bólam*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Borneo, Morotai.

Vatica papuana Dyer, Journ. of Bot. 16, 1878, 100; Van Slooten, Bull. Jard. bot. Buit., Sér. III, 9, 1927, 112.

Morotai, Loc. 12, frequent in old forest, alt. 100 m, June 21: *n. 3504* (tree, 20 m high, bole 11 m, diam. 0.30—0.20 m, lvs. l. green, paler below, petioles brownish green, branchlets often with a fungus-gall; nat. n.: *íroe*).

Distribution: Borneo, Philippines (Tawi-Tawi), Moluccas (Morotai, Obi, Batjan, Ambon), New Guinea.

VIOLACEAE

Rinorea amboinensis Merr., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 11, 1916, 292.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 8: *n. 2902* (tree, 7 m; nat. n.: *malètah*).

Distribution: ? Sumatra, Talaud, Ambon.

FLACOURTIACEAE

Homalium foetidum (Wall.) Benth., Journ. Linn. Soc. Bot. 4, 1860, 35.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 50 m, June 21: *n. 3497* (tree, 20 m, bole 14 m, diam. 0.30—0.20 m, trunk straight, cylindrical, lvs. bright green, entire infl. [in bud] l. green; nat. n.: *atébeh*).

Distribution: Borneo, Celebes, Moluccas, New Guinea.

Osmelia philippina (Turcz.) F.-Vill., Noviss. App., 1880, 93.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 200 m, June 23: *n. 3570* (shrub ± 2.5 m high, branchlets greyish brown, lvs. d. green, infl. l. green; nat. n.: *móétingóéti*).

Distribution: Philippines, Morotai, New Guinea.

Scolopia ?spinosa (Roxb.) Warb. in Engl.-Prantl, Nat. Pflanzenf. 3, pt. 6a, 1893, 29.

Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, Lapean'a forest reserve, frequent in cleared old forest, alt. 75 m, May 26: *n. 3174* (tree, 14 m high, bole 9 m, diam. 0.34—0.23 m, trunk straight, cylindrical, greyish brown, branchlets brown, lvs. shining at both sides, slightly darker above; wood used for house construction; nat. n.: *boenároh*).

Distribution: S. China, Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Palawan, Talaud.

PASSIFLORACEAE

Adenia pandurata Hall. f., Meded. 's Rijks Herb. 42, 1922, 12.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 10, *n. 2934* (climbing, entirely l. green); bank of K. Bahewa, Pasir Malap, alt. 20 m, May 14: *n. 3015* (climbing, some m long, lvs. rather d. green above, midrib paler, paler below with darker nerves, buds and fr. l. green; nat. n.: *sasariwoe*); same locality and date: *n. 3016* (climbing, several m long, fr. yellow and green, slightly orange at apex; nat. n.: *tatanároe waráwoh*).

Distribution: Talaud, S.W. New Guinea.

Passiflora foetida L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 959.

Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, common on open grounds, alt. 60 m, May 26: *n. 3193* (climbing and creeping herb, some m long, lvs. d. green, dull above, shining below, calyx l. green, corolla white, fr. yellow, orange in maturity, with sweet tasting arillus; nat. n.: *manisàn'a*).

Distribution: pantropic.

DATISCACEAE

Octomeles sumatrana Miq., Fl. Ind. Bat., suppl., 1861—'62, 336.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, frequent in old forest, alt. 20 m, June 28: *n. 3634* (lofty straight tree, 40 m high, bole 28 m, diam. 1.20—0.5 m, trunk brown, cylindrical, buttresses 3 m spreading and 4 m high, lvs. d. green above, l. green below, filaments greenish white, anthers l. brown, young fr. dull green; nat. n.: *dadátoko* [Alifuru] or *salawàkoe* [Malay]).

Distribution: Sumatra, Borneo, Celebes, Philippines, Moluccas, Timor, New Guinea, Bismarck Archipelago.

Remark: Specimens with a height of ± 60 m are not rare; the buttresses may be 4 m spreading and 8 m high.

THYMELAEACEAE

Gyrinopsis Cumingiana Decne, Ann. Sci. Nat., Sér. II, 19, 1843, 41.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 130 m, June 22: *n. 3539* (small tree, 3.5 m, cauliflorous; nat. n.: *bòkoein*).

Distribution: Celebes, Philippines, Morotai.

Phaleria urens (Reinw.) Koord., Med. 's Lands Plantent. 19, 1898, 577.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 60 m, April 30: *n. 2702* (tree, 9 m, cauliflorous, flow. white, nat. n.: *la'awàn'a*).

Distribution: Java, Celebes, Talaud.

Wikstroemia indica (L.) C. A. Mey., Bull. Ac. Petersb. 1, 1843, 357.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, alt. 250 m, very frequent, June 2: *n. 3315* (shrub, 0.5—0.2 m; nat. n.: **peràpat'a* [Tal.] or *posi-posi* [Manado Malay]).

Distribution: India, S. China and Formosa to Philippines and New Guinea.

LYTHRACEAE

Pemphis acidula Forst., Char. Gen., 1776, 68, t. 34.

Miangas, Loc. 9, beach, alt. 3 m, frequent, June 12: *n. 3413* (shrub, ± 2 m high, lvs. bright green, calyx, pedicels and filaments l. green, anthers l. yellow; nat. n.: *ngíra*).

Distribution: paleotropic.

SONNERATIACEAE

Duabanga moluccana Bl., Mus. Bot. Lugd.-Bat. 2, 1856, 109.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, frequent in old forest, alt. 60 m, May 1: *n. 2723* (lofty tree, 41 m high, bole 28 m, diam. 0.61—0.31 m, trunk straight, l. brown, lvs. bright green, pedicels and calyx green, corolla, filaments and style greenish white, anthers brownish white, stigma green, ovary yellowish white, fr. shining green, torus l. yellowish brown; wood used for proa construction; nat. n.: *wároh*).

Distribution: Java, Borneo, Celebes, Talaud, Moluccas and Lesser Sunda Islands (Bali, Lombok, Soembawa).

Sonneratia caseolaris (L.) Engl. in Engl. & Prantl, Nat. Pflanzenfam. Nachtr. 1, 1897, 261.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, on coral reeves frequent, April 23: *n. 2504* (tree, 15 m; nat. n.: **peràpat'a*).

Distribution: E. Africa to Australia.

LECYTHIDACEAE

Barringtonia acuminata Korth., Ned. Kruidk. Arch. 1, 1848, 206.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest; *n. 3493* (small tree, 6 m, flow. bright red; nat. n.: *pàngâha*).

Distribution: Borneo, Morotai, Ambon.

Barringtonia racemosa (L.) Bl. in DC., Prodr. 3, 1828, 288.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, frequent on riverbank, alt. 90 m, June 21: *n. 3349* (tree, 4 m, flow. greenish white, pedicels and fruiting calyx red; nat. n.: *párang'a*; bast and fr. contain a fishing dope) — Loc. 2, old forest on ridge, alt. 100 m, May 5: *n. 2844* (tree, 16.5 m, fr. green; nat. n.: *boeároh*; from bast fishing dope, used like the tuba dope, is made) — Salebaboe, Loc. 6, drier parts of swamp, alt. 5 m, frequent, May 28: *n. 3226* (tree, 6 m, flow. white or sometimes somewhat pink, with cocoa odour, fr. green; nat. n.: *párang'a*).

Distribution: India to Polynesia.

RHIZOPHORACEAE

Bruguiera conjugata (L.) Merr., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 9, 1914, 118.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, in mangrove, very frequent, April 23: *n. 2503* (tree, 6 m, calyx pink without; nat. n.: *nandsi *ésat'a*); April 28: *n. 2673* (tree, 7 m, corolla brown; nat. n.: *nandsi *wawine*).

Distribution: paleotropic.

Bruguiera cylindrica (L.) Bl., Enum. 1, 1828, 93.

Miangas, Loc. 9, in mangrove, many specimens together, June 12: *n. 3401* (tree, 4 m; nat. n.: *nandsi*).

Distribution: India to Philippines and New Guinea.

Carallia brachiata (Lour.) Merr., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 15, 1919, 249.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Goegoeti, G. Ligòjer, old forest on limestone, alt. 100 m, June 24: *n. 3587*.

Distribution: India to Australia.

Ceriops Roxburghiana Arn., Ann. Nat. Hist. 1, 1838, 363.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, in mangrove, very frequent, April 23: *n. 2502* (small tree, 5 m, flow. greenish yellow; nat. n.: *larita*).

Distribution: India to Philippines and New Guinea.

Rhizophora mucronata Lam., Enc. Bot. 6, 1804, 189.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, in mangrove, frequent, April 28: *n. 2674* (tree, 9 m, flow. white; nat. n.: *nandsi *ésat'a*).

Distribution: paleotropic.

COMBRETACEAE

Lumnitzera littorea (Jack) Voigt, Hort. Suburb. Calcutt., 1845, 39.

Miangas, Loc. 9, mangrove, alt. 1 m, frequent, June 12: *n. 3408* (small straight tree, ± 5 m high, branchlets greyish brown, lvs. coriaceous, rather d. green, shining, pedicels green, calyx dirty green, corolla bright red, filaments and style red, anthers and stigma dirty yellow, fr. shining green; nat. n.: *sawòwoh*).

Distribution: tropical Asia to Polynesia.

Terminalia Copelandii Elm., Leafl. Phil. Bot. 5, 1913, 1795.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, bank of K. Bahewa, sec. forest, alt. 20 m, May 16: *n. 3035* (tree, 24 m high, bole 11 m, diam. 0.75—0.60 m, trunk straight, cylindrical, bark brown, fissured, foliage just forming, young leaves dirty reddish brown, flow. entirely white, fetid, young infl. l. green; wood very much in demand for proa construction; nat. n.: *lanóéang'a*).

Distribution: Palawan, Talaud.

MYRTACEAE

Decaspermum ?Blancoi Vid., Phan. Cum. Phil., 1885, 112, 172.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, very frequent on open slope, alt. 300 m, May 31: *n. 3273* (dense shrub, 1.5 m, flow. white to pink).

Distribution: Philippines, Talaud.

Eugenia ?acutangula K. Schum., Fl. Kais. Wilh. Land, 1889, 89.

Morotai, Loc. 12, on gravel bank along river, alt. 40 m, June 26: *n. 3616* (tree, 35 m, bark scaling off; nat. n.: *háleh* [Mor.] or *sáleh* [Ternate]; Marilako, riverbank, frequent: *n. 3638* (tree, 15 m; same nat. n.).

Distribution: Morotai, Ceram, New Guinea.

Eugenia ?calubcob C. B. Rob., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 4, 1909, 364.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, frequent in old forest, alt. 250 m, May 25: *n. 3165* (tree, 17 m, fr. edible; nat. n.: *mariwáoe*).

Distribution: Philippines, Talaud.

Eugenia claviflora Roxb., Fl. Ind., ed. 2, 2, 1832, 488.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, alt. 350 m, May 31: *n. 3271* (shrub, 2 m); alt. 480 m, June 2: *n. 3323* (shrub, 2 m, fr. pink).

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 330 m, June 25: *n. 3604* (tree, 4 m, fr. d. red; nat. n.: *máko-mákor*).

Distribution: India, Malay Peninsula, Philippines, Talaud, Morotai.

Eugenia cymosa Lam., Enc. Bot. 3, 1789, 199.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, low forest, alt. 500 m, May 31: *n. 3255* (small tree, 3 m, fr. dirty violet; nat. n.: *sasáli'mbanáran'a*); open slope, alt. 400 m, May 31: *n. 3256* (tree, 7 m, fr. violet; nat. n.: *malóéntoh*).

Distribution: Mauritius, India, Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Talaud.

Eugenia ?Everettii C. B. Rob., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 4, 1909, 371.

Kaboeroeang, Loc. 5, Pangangadoan'a grove, cleared old forest, alt. 200 m, May 27: *n. 3200* (tree, 13 m, flow. white; nat. n.: *taná'a*; wood in demand for house construction).

Distribution: Philippines, Talaud.

Eugenia ?fastigiata (Bl.) Koord., Med. 's Lands Plantent. 40, 1900, 104.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, cleared old forest, alt. 100 m, April 26: *n. 2607* (tree, 12 m, flow. yellowish green, fr. green when young, turning red and ultimately black; nat. n.: *barámbang'a*) — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open forest, alt. 300 m, June 2: *n. 3313* (tree, 8 m; nat. n.: *raba'mpóéne*).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Talaud, Ambon.

Eugenia formosa Wall., Pl. As. Rar. 2, pt. 6, 1831, t. 108.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 50 m, June 20: *n. 3464* (tree, 8 m; nat. n.: *tómi-tómi*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Morotai.

Eugenia panduriformis Elm., Leafl. Phil. Bot. 4, 1912, 1412.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, partly cleared old forest, alt. 120 m, April 27: *n. 2664* (tree, 19.5 m high, bole 6.5 m, diam. 0.30—0.19 m, lvs. d. green with paler nerves above, paler below, calyx l. green, corolla greenish white in bud, filaments white, anthers l. greenish white, young fr. l. green; nat. n.: *aladóng'a*) — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, very frequent in old forest, alt. 100 m, June 3: *n. 3336* (tree, 12 m high, bole 9 m, diam. 0.20—0.15 m, trunk straight, cylindrical, pedicels green, calyx greenish white, corolla and filaments white, anthers l. brown, style greenish white, stigma l. green; nat. n.: *aladóng'a*).

Distribution: Mindanao, Talaud.

Eugenia saligna (Miq.) C. B. Rob., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 4, 1909, 392.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest on steep slope, alt. 70 m, May 5: *n. 2841* (tree, 28 m, flow. white; nat. n.: *aléwat'a*) — Nenoesa, Loc. 11, Garete, very frequent in cleared forest on limestone, alt. 5 m, June 14: *n. 3451* (tree, 13 m, flow. white; nat. n.: *maíle*).

Distribution: India to Philippines and Australia.

Myrtella Beccarii F. Muell., Descr. Pap. Pl., 1875, 106.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, very frequent, alt. 450 m, June 1: *n. 3286* (strongly branched shrub, 0.5—2 m high, branchlets l. grey, twigs brown or reddish, lvs. bright yellowish green or green, calyx yellowish green, corolla, stamens and gynaeceum creamy white).

Distribution: Talaud, New Guinea.

Osbornia octodonta F. Muell., Fragm. 3, 1862, 31.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, in *Sonneratia* forest on coral reef, alt. 0 m, April 28: *n. 2672* (small widely branched tree, 3 m high, bole 0.2 m, bark l. brown, scaling, lvs. coriaceous, bright green, petioles reddish brown; nat. n.: *taráoe'oe*).

Distribution: E. Java, N.E. Borneo, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Soembawa, S. New Guinea, N. Australia (cf. Van Steenis in De Trop. Nat. 25, 1936, 195 and Van Slooten in Blumea, Suppl. I, 1937, 171).

MELASTOMATACEAE (R. C. Bakhuizen van den Brink Jr.)

Astronia macrophylla Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 1080.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 60 m, April 30: *n. 2695* (small straight tree, ± 7 m high, bark greenish brown, lvs. rather d. green above, calyx brown in fr., young fr. brownish green; nat. n.: **tengtáramiseán*); Pasir Malap, old forest, alt. 50 m, May 13: very frequent, *n. 2979* (tree 8 m high, fr. coffee-brown; same nat. n. as n. 2695) — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, light forest, alt. 400 m; *n. 3320* (small tree, ± 5 m high, lvs. shining above, corolla red in bud).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Ambon.

Astronia ternatana Bakh. f., nov. spec.

Arbor mediocris, 19 m alta. *Rami* acute tetragoni, dense ferrugineo-lepidoti. *Folia* opposita oblonga, apice obtusiuscula, brevissime acuminata, basi acuta 5-nervia, nervi tertiarii transversi paulo conspicui haud reticulati, supra glabra nitida, subtus dense ferrugineo-lepidota, 8.5—14 cm longa, 3.5—6 cm lata, petioli 1.5—2.5 cm longi. *Inflorescentiae* terminales, 10 cm (vel ultra?) longae dense ferrugineo-lepidotae, pedunculis acute tetragonis canaliculatis, bracteis lanceolatis 0.3 × 0.1 cm, bracteolis 0.1—0.15 cm longis. Flores patentes mihi ignoti, alabastra obtuse ovoidea; pedicelli 0.1—0.15 cm longi; *calyx* campanulatus, basi subrotundato-quadrangularis, apicem versus attenuatus, sub apice perspicue constrictus, dense ferrugineo-lepidotus 0.25—0.3 cm longus, margine 5-lobatus, lobis crassis ovatis acutissimis 0.1—0.15 cm longis; *petala* 5 suborbicularia obtusa; *stamina* 10, antheris dolabriformibus minutis obtusis; *ovarium* calyce adnato, 3-loculare, apice excavatum, radiato-elevato-lineatum, stylo lepidoto 0.3—0.35 cm longo, stigmate capitellato subglobose lepidoto convexo 0.1 cm lato. *Baccae* ovoideae limbo 5-lobato praeditae, dense ferrugineo-vel rubiginoso-lepidotae, 0.35—0.4 cm longae, pedicellis 0.3—0.35 cm longis; *semina* linearia fere 0.3 cm longa.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Goegoeti, G. Ligòjer, alt. 60 m, old forest, April 24: *n. 3581* (tree, 19 m high, bole 8 m, straight, cylindrical, d. brown, diam. 0.35—0.25 m, lvs. d. green above, lower side with petioles and branchlets

rich ferruginously pubescent; nat. n.: *gohora*) — Ternate, Lagoena, 450 m: *Beguin 692* (*typus fructus* L., dupl. Bz.) — Halmahera, Tobelo, 800 m: *Beguin 2311* (*typus floris*, L., dupl. Bz.).

Distribution: Morotai, Halmahera, Ternate; related species occur in N. Borneo, the Philippines and New Guinea.

Medinilla crassinervia Bl., Flora 14, 1831, 510.

Morotai, Loc. 12, G. Ligòjer, Goegoeti, old forest, alt. 100 m, June 24: *n. 3594* (climbing, ± 15 m high, branchlets l. brown, lvs. shining, d. green above, fr. l. yellowish green, peduncles green, pedicels yellowish red).

Distribution: ? Malay Peninsula, ? Borneo, Celebes, Moluccas (Morotai, Ternate, Boeroe, Ceram, Ambon, Banda), New Guinea.

Medinilla pterocaula Bl., Flora 14, 1831, 509.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, bank of rivulet, alt. 100 m, April 27: *n. 2666* (liana, several m long, stems brown, lvs. d. green above, l. green below, peduncles l. green, pedicels reddish violet, calyx l. green, corolla white, filaments and style yellowish green, anthers pink, white at base, stigma pink, young fr. l. green with violet margin) — Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 60 m, May 2: *n. 2755* (liana, lvs. bright green above, paler below, fr. dirty violet, pedicels reddish violet; nat. n.: *bindóé'a*); Pasir Malap, bank of K. Bahewa, alt. 20 m, May 14: *n. 3011* (liana, some m long, branchlets very pale grey, calyx pale yellow with red margin, corolla etc. as in n. 2666, ovary yellowish white, fr. and pedicels red; nat. n.: **dandíla*).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Talaud, New Guinea.

Medinilla Teysmanni Miq., Ann. Mus. Bot. Lugd.-Bat. 1, 1863—'64, 217.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, bank of K. Bahewa, alt. 30 m, May 3: *n. 2773* (shrub, branchlets greyish brown, lvs. dull d. green above, entire infrutescence and fr. snowy white, only the scars of the fallen bracts red).

Distribution: N. Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas (Tidore, Boeroe, Ceram), ? New Guinea.

Melastoma polyanthum Bl., Flora 14, 1831, 480.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, sunny place, alt. 100 m, April 24: *n. 2551* (shrub, 1 m high, lvs. l. green, nerves reddish or brownish below, calyx brownish green, corolla l. violet) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, skirt of forest, alt. 220 m, May 22: *n. 3100* (shrub, ± 2 m high, branchlets brownish grey, lvs. rather d. green above, calyx dirty pink, corolla violet, torus red, filaments l. yellow, the tips violet, anthers l. yellow, style violet, stigma l. green, ovary dirty pink; nat. n.: **tengtáramiseán èsaka*).

Distribution: India to Philippines and tropical Australia.

Memecylon costatum Miq., Anal. Bot. Ind. I, Verh. 1e kl. Ned. Inst. 2e reeks, 3, 1850, 29.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 200 m, May 9: *n. 2917* (tree?, 7 m high, branchlets brown, young fr. l. green with pink rim; nat. n.: *tatimbákas'a*: wood used for paddy pounders).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula to Philippines and Moluccas.

Memecylon protrusum Bakh. f., nov. spec.

Arbuscula, 4 m alta. Ramuli teretes glabri nitidi, nodis incrassati. *Folia*

opposita oblonga, breviter obtuse acuminata, basi rotundata, subcordato-amplexicaulia, subtrinervia glabra, supra nitida, subtus pallida, 25 cm longa, 11—13 cm lata, petioli latissimi usque ad 0.5 cm longi, costa media crassa, nervi tertiarii transversi, utrinque, praecipue subtus, perspicui haud reticulati. *Inflorescentiae* axillares, minutissimae, 1- vel maxime 3-florae, pedunculo tereti 0.2—0.3 cm longo. *Flores* ignoti. *Baccae* ellipsoideae, basi subacutae obliquae, apice limbo tetragono truncato coronatae, glabrae, venatae, 1.4—1.6 cm longae et diametro, pedicellis 0.2—0.3 cm longis, baccarum apices protrusae, calycis limbo excedentes vel aequales, obscure radiato-elevato-lineatae (discus epigynus).

Morotai, Loc. 12, Goegoeti, old forest, alt. 60 m, June 20: *n. 3470* (small straight tree, 4 m high, branchlets greyish brown, lvs. rigid, fairly d. green above, l. green below, fr. bright red; *type specimen*, L., dupl. Bz.).

Distribution: endemic. Its relation is with *M. costatum* Miq. (see above), *M. excelsum* Bl. (Sumatra, Java) and *M. gigantifolium* Elm. (Philippines; probably a form of *M. costatum*).

Osbeckia zeylanica L. f., Suppl., 1781, 215.

Nenoesa, Loc. 10, Merampi, G. Maranggi, alang-alang field, alt. 170 m, June 13: *n. 3435* (undershrub, stem reddish, lvs. green, l. green below, calyx l. green, corolla violet, tetramerous, filaments, style and stigma violet, anthers l. yellow, fr. reddish).

Distribution: India to Japan, Philippines, New Guinea and tropical Australia.

ONAGRACEAE

Jussieua angustifolia Lam., Enc. Bot. 3, 1789, 331.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 20 m, April 25: *n. 2574* (undershrub, 0.7 m high, lvs. l. green, petioles red at base, calyx l. green, slightly reddish, corolla yellow, ovary l. green, slightly reddish; nat. n.: **lá'a'mbábi*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 6, Lota swamp near Moronge, alt. 5 m, May 28: *n. 3217* (herb, lvs. bright green, stems often reddish, calyx green, margins slightly reddish).

Distribution: pantropic.

Jussieua linifolia Vahl, Eclog. Am. 2, 1798, 32.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, wayside, alt. 10 m, April 26: *n. 2629* (widely branched undershrub, 1.9 m high, lvs. and calyx green, fr. reddish).

Distribution: pantropic.

ARALIACEAE

Arthrophyllum diversifolium Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 879.

Kar-akelong, Loc. 1, cleared old forest, alt. 100 m, April 26: *n. 2616* (tree, 8 m, flow. greenish yellow; nat. n.: *langatòra*); alt. 120 m, April 27: *n. 2656* (tree, 15 m, fr. almost black; same nat. n. as n. 2616) — Loc. 2, Pasir Malap, frequent in old forest, alt. 60 m, May 13: *n. 2977* (tree, 12 m; same nat. n. as n. 2616) — Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, Tonana forest reserve, very frequent in cleared old forest, alt. 75 m, May 26: *n. 3180* (tree, 11 m; nat. n.: *mángga *ahoerángan*).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula to Celebes, Talaud and New Guinea. Probably *A. Ahernianum* Merr. from Philippines is identical with this species.

Boerlageodendron barbatum (Becc.) Harms in Engl. & Prantl, Nat. Pflanzenfam. 3, pt. 8, 1894, 31.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, riverbank, alt. 50 m, May 1: *n. 2722* (tree, 6 m).

Distribution: Talaud, Banda, Kai.

Boerlageodendron serratifolium Elm., Leafl. Phil. Bot. 7, 1914, 2328.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, riverbank, alt. 20 m, April 23: *n. 2514* (small tree, lateral infl. yellow orange, fr. d. violet; nat. n.: *laripàtoe*); cleared old forest, alt. 40 m, April 25: *n. 2575* (small tree, 3 m, central fr. d. violet, lateral infl. orange-yellow) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, cleared old forest, alt. 100 m, frequent, May 21: *n. 3078* (small tree, 1—6 m, young lateral infl. yellow, central ones l. green to d. red, fr. almost black; nat. n.: *laripàtoe*).

Distribution: Philippines (Leyte), Talaud.

Remark: The area of the genus is centred in New Guinea (16 species, Harms 1921) and the Philippines (22 species, Merrill 1923); some other species occur in Celebes and Borneo.

Polyscias nodosa (Bl.) Seem., Journ. Bot. 3, 1865, 181.

Morotai, Loc. 12, riverbank, alt. 40 m, June 22: *n. 3540* (tree, 13 m; nat. n.: *kòbo-kòbo*).

Distribution: Java, Celebes, Philippines, Moluccas.

Polyscias Rumphiana Harms in Engl. & Prantl, Nat. Pflanzenfam. 3, pt. 8, 1894, 45.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, N. Maraloem, beach, May 16: *n. 3040* (small tree, 2 m, infl. and flow. l. green; nat. n.: *limbawòtang*).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud, Moluccas, Timor, New Guinea.

Schefflera ?confinis (Miq.) R. Vig., Ann. Sci. Nat. Sér. 9, 9, 1909, 355.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, steep riverbank, alt. 50 m, May 3: *n. 2786* (overhanging shrub, flow. buds l. greenish yellow; nat. n.: *ángkang'a*).

Distribution: Java, Celebes, Talaud, Halmahera.

Schefflera elliptica (Seem.) Harms in Engl. & Prantl, Nat. Pflanzenfam. 3, pt. 8, 1894, 36.

Miangas, in small grove on G. Kota, 90 m alt., June 11: *n. 3377* (liana, flow. yellowish greenish white; nat. n.: *anóéwoe*).

Distribution: Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Ceram, New Guinea.

Schefflera ovoidea Merr., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 3, 1908, 160.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 150 m, May 11: *n. 2943* (epiphytic).

Distribution: Mindanao, Talaud.

Tetraplasandra Koordersii Harms, Ann. Jard. bot. Buit. 19, 1904, 12.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, alt. 400 m, May 31: *n. 3262* (tree up to 8 m, infl. and fr. l. green; nat. n.: *langatòra*).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud.

ERICACEAE

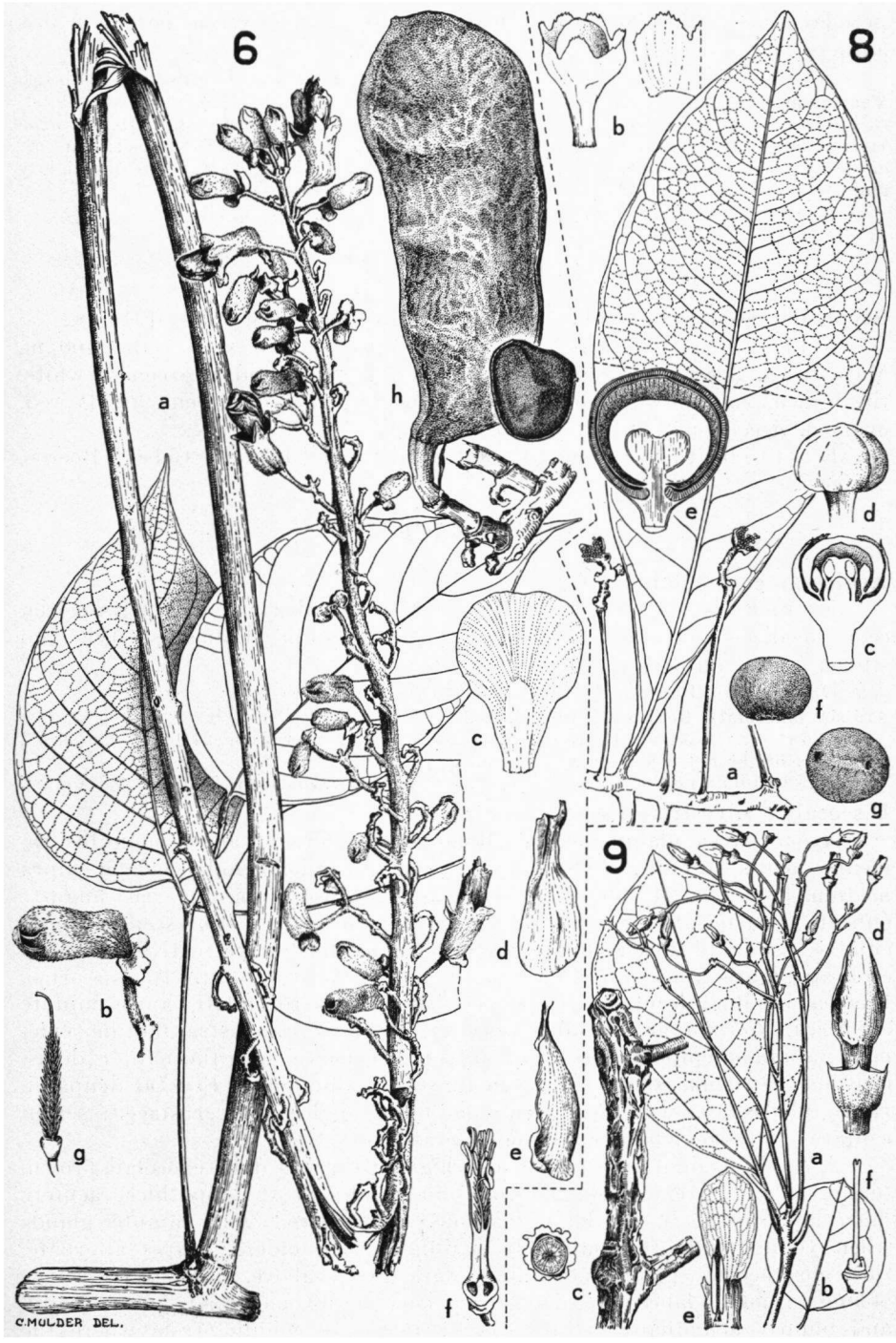
Iaera lanaensis (Merr.) Copel., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 47, 1932, 83, t. 6, fig. 1—6.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, bank of K. Tatamboewe, old forest, alt. 60 m, May 8: *n. 2897* (epiphytic, branches l. brown, lvs. coriaceous, bright green,

Fig. 6 — *Macropsychanthus dolichobotrys* Holth., n. sp. — a. flowering branchlet; b. flower bud; c. vexillum; d. ala; e. carina; f. staminal tube from above; g. carpel and style; h. pod and seed (a.—g. after *Lam n. 3002*, h. after *Lam n. 2893*).

Fig. 8 — *Discocalyx silvestris* Holth., n. sp. — a. branchlet with leaf and inflorescences; b. flower bud with part of calyx enlarged; c. flower bud, longitudinal section; d. corolla in bud, the calyx being removed; e. fruit, longitudinal section; f. seed, lateral view; g. ditto, top view (a.—g. after the *type specimen*).

Fig. 9 — *Jasminum suberosum* Holth., n. sp. — a. branchlet with young leaf and inflorescences; b. leaf; c. suberized branchlet with cross-section; d. flower bud; e. petal and stamen, inside; f. ovary and style (after the *type specimen*).


6
8
9
a
h
b
c
d
e
f
g
C.MULDER DEL.

petioles almost white or brown, pedicels and calyx l. green, corolla white, anthers yellow, ovary l. green).

Distribution: Philippines (Panay, Negros, Mindanao), Talaud.

Vaccinium ?Vidalii Merr. & Rolfe, Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 3, 1908, 374.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open slope, alt. 400 m, May 31: *n. 3259* (terrestrial shrub up to 3 m, flow. bright red, fr. d. violet-red as is pedicel; nat. n.: *aloelá'a*); same alt. and date; *n. 3274* (widely branched shrub, flow. white or slightly pink; same nat. n. as n. 3259).

Distribution: Luzon, Talaud.

EPACRIDACEAE

Styphelia moluccana (Scheff.) J. J. Smith, Icon. Bogor. 4, 1910, 82.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, alt. 400 m, May 31: *n. 3280* (shrub, 1.5 m high, lvs. l. green, calyx greenish white, tip brown, corolla white or slightly brownish, style l. green, stigma red, ovary l. green; nat. n.: **tolenàsoe*).

Distribution: Talaud, Moluccas (Soela Islands, Gebeh, Boeroe, Ambon).

MYRSINACEAE

Aegiceras corniculatum (L.) Blco., Fl. Filip., 1837, 79.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, beach, alt. 1 m, April 23: *n. 2500* (lvs. coriaceous, pedicels and calyx l. greenish brown, corolla, filaments, style and stigma white, anthers l. brown).

Distribution: India to Australia.

Ardisia lanceolata Roxb., Fl. Ind. 2, 1824, 73.

Morotai, Loc. 12, G. Ligòjer, old forest, alt. 120 m, June 24: *n. 3593* (shrub, 0.5 m, fr. bright red, pedicel and calyx pink).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula to Celebes, Mindanao, Morotai and Ceram.

Discocalyx silvestris Holth., nov. spec. *Fig. 8* (p. 223).

Arbor parva glabra, erecta. Rami glabri, teretes, apice nonnullis ramentis acutis suffulti. *Folia* tenuiter chartacea, oblongo-lanceolata, supra medium latissima, 24—30 × 9—13 cm, apice obtuse acuminata, basi anguste cuneata e parte latissima gradatim angustata, integra. *Inflorescentiae* paniculatae, usque ad 20 cm longae, ex ramulis axillaribus vel extra-axillaribus efoliosis glabris apice interdum furcatis cicatricibus permultis rugosis ortae, bracteae acutae deciduae. *Calyx* 5-lobatus, lobi rotundati, apice minute crenulati. *Corolla* gamopetala, lobis 5 rotundatis (alabastra tantum videmus), *stamina* epipetalia sessilia, antheris truncatis longitudinaliter dehiscentibus. *Ovarium* columnare, stigmate sessili 5-angulato. *Fructus* drupacei, rubri, globosi, 0.8 cm alti, pericarpio tenui, endocarpio crustaceo; semen solitare depresso-globosum, albumine crasso.

A small straight *tree*, up to 5 m high. Branches dark chocolate-brown, terete, about 0.6 cm thick, glabrous, bud scales at the top thick, acutely lanceolate, up to 1 cm long, glabrous but covered with minute glands when young, and often minutely papillate when older. *Leaves* alternate, thin chartaceous, glabrous, shining, dark green above, pale green below, oblong to oblong-lanceolate, 24—30 cm long, 9—13 cm broad, apex broadly and bluntly acuminate, greatest width above the middle, from where the

blade is gradually narrowing into the petiole, base narrowly cuneate, margins entire, midrib prominent below, secondary nerves 12—15, slender but conspicuous on either side, ascending at an angle of about 60°, curved towards the margin, archingly joined near the apex, tertiary nerves reticulate, often one or two between each pair of secondary ones stronger to almost as strong as the secondary nerves; petioles pale brown, 1.5 cm long, 0.3—0.4 cm thick, sulcate above. *Inflorescences* borne on specialized axillary or extra-axillary branches, which are glabrous, 4.5—20 cm long, 0.2—0.3 cm thick and entirely leafless, the inflorescences unbranched or sometimes forked, rugose with numerous scars, the tips bearing small panicles in the axils of bracts, which closely resemble the bud scales, but are somewhat smaller, panicles pink, 1—1.5 cm long, when in fruit up to 4 cm long, many-flowered, pedicels about 0.1 cm long. Flowers glabrous. Calyx in old buds about 0.1 cm long, with five blunt lobes, which are minutely crenulate at the top. *Corolla* globular in bud, gamopetalous, the 5 lobes rounded and with small resiniferous streaks or spots. *Stamens* 5, epipetalous, the anthers sessile, oblong-quadrangular, truncate or emarginate at apex, dehiscent over their full length. *Ovary* columnar, glabrous, the stigma sessile and 5-angular with minute slightly recurved teeth. *Fruit* a drupe, with persistent calyx, carmine, globose, 0.8 cm long, 0.7 cm in diameter, with faint longitudinal ribs, pericarp thin, endocarp crustaceous, shining within, the placenta surrounding the solitary seed like a balloon; seed depressedly globose with hard hyaline-white endosperm, 0.5 cm in diameter, with an apical groove, provided with small pits on either end, black when dry.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 200 m, May 8: *n. 2896* (tree, 4.5 m high, fruiting; nat. n.: *sóéwing'oe* **oeróéne*); Pasir Malap, old forest, alt. 70 m, May 13: *n. 2975* (small tree, 1.5 m high, fruiting; nat. n.: *sóéwing'a*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 260 m, frequent, May 23: *n. 3132* (small tree, ± 3 m, with very young buds); alt. 250 m, May 25: *n. 3166* (tree, ± 5 m high, with old buds and ripe fr.; wood used for house construction; *type specimen*, L., dupl. Bz.).

Remarks: The genus is known from N. Borneo (1 species), the Philippines (37 sp.), New Guinea (4 sp.), Micronesia (4 sp.), Tonga and Fiji (4 sp.).

Embelia coriacea A. DC., Trans. Linn. Soc. Bot. 17, 1834, 135.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 100 m, June 21: *n. 3509* (liana, ± 25 m long, lvs. dull d. green, slightly paler below, infl. l. greenish brown).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Mindanao, Basilan, Morotai.

Maesa tetrandra (Roxb.) A. DC. in DC. Prodr. 8, 1844, 82.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, April 24: *n. 2524* (small tree, 2.5 m high, branches brown, lvs. l. green, nerves brownish, calyx l. green, fr. fleshy, white when ripe; nat. n.: **tengtáramiseán*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, wayside, alt. 30 m, May 21: *n. 3092* (small tree, ± 3 m high, branchlets brown with paler lenticels, lvs. dull green, calyx greenish white, corolla white, fr. fleshy, translucent white when ripe).

Distribution: Java, Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea.

Rapanea densiflora (Scheff.) Mez in Engl., Pflanzenr. 9, 1902, 365.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, alt. 300 m, May 31: *n. 3258* (shrub, ± 2.5 m high, branchlets grey, dwarf shoots brown, lvs. coriaceous, bright green, petioles greenish white, corolla greenish white with orange spots without) — Miangas, P. Baronto, on limestone, alt. 7 m, June 11: *n. 3373* (shrub, ± 2 m high, pedicels and calyx l. green; nat. n.: *pilíneh*) — Nenoesa, Loc. 10, Merampi, forest on limestone, alt. 100 m, June 13: *n. 3420* (tree, ± 10 m high, trunk straight, lvs. rather l. green, fr. and pedicels l. green; nat. n.: *pirineh*).

Distribution: Talaud, Salawati, Kai, New Guinea.

SAPOTACEAE (H. J. Lam)

Manilkara Merrilliana H. J. Lam, Blumea 4, 1941, 334.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Goegoeti, G. Ligòjer, old forest on limestone, alt. 100 m, locally frequent, June 24: *n. 3584* (lofty tree, 30 m high, trunk columnar, perfectly straight, bark fissured, very d. brown, bole 20 m, diam. 0.60—0.40 m, lvs. bright green, shining, milky juice white, abundant, thick and sticky; nat. n.: *ligòjer*).

Distribution: Philippines (Luzon, Samar, Mindanao), Central Celebes, Morotai.

Remarks: The specimen was formerly (Bull. Jard. bot. Buit., Sér. III, 7, 1925, 241 and 8, 1927, 481) erroneously quoted as *Northia fasciculata* (Warb.) H. J. Lam (*Mimusops fasciculata* Warb.). The locality G. Ligòjer is named after this species, one of the loftiest and finest trees in the forest. The tree may attain a height of 40 m; a girth of 5.65 m was actually measured. The wood is very hard.

Palaquium bataanense Merr., Bur. Gov. Lab. Bull. 17, 1904, 44; H. J. Lam, l.c., 1927, 395.

Nenoesa, Loc. 11, Garete, frequent in cleared forest on limestone, alt. 5 m, June 14: *n. 3446* (tree, ± 10 m high, diam. ± 0.3 m., lvs. shining d. green above, l. green below, midrib greenish white, calyx and pedicels l. green, latex fairly abundant, white; nat. n.: *anggirían*; wood used for proa construction).

Distribution: Philippines, Talaud, Central Celebes.

Palaquium Lobbianum Burck, Ann. Jard. bot. Buit. 5, 1886, 29; H. J. Lam, l.c. 1927, 398.

Morotai, Loc. 12, very frequent in old forest, alt. 60 m, June 21: *n. 3508* (young tree, ± 8 m high, bark white, branchlets brownish white, lvs. dull d. green above, ferruginously pubescent below; nat. n.: *tehíriki*); Goegoeti, G. Ligòjer, frequent in old forest on limestone, alt. 60 m, June 24: *n. 3579* (tree, 30 m high, bole 21 m, diam. 0.35—0.25 m, trunk straight, without buttresses, cylindrical, brownish green, latex not abundant, white, sticky, lvs. and nat. n. as in n. 3508).

Distribution: Morotai, Halmahera, Ternate.

Palaquium luzoniense (F. Vill.) Vid., Rev. Pl. Vasc. Fil., 1886, 176; H. J. Lam, l.c. 1927, 400.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 60 m, May 2: *n. 2736* (tree, 46 m high, bole 32 m, diam. 0.85—0.63 m, buttresses and stilt-roots up to 4 m high and 2.5 m spreading, latex abundant, watery, white, not

sticky, lvs. d. green above, nerves lighter, lower side brown pubescent, ultimately glabrous and dull green, calyx and pedicel coffee-brown pubescent; nat. n.: *góémat'a*).

Distribution: Philippines, Talaud, Celebes.

Palaquium obtusifolium Burck, Ann. Jard. bot. Buit. 5, 1886, 33; H. J. Lam, l.c. 1927, 411.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, Pasir Malap, old forest on riverbank, alt. 20 m, May 14: *n. 3006* (tree, 35.8 m high, bole 27.8 m, diam. 0.32—0.21 m, trunk straight, cylindrical, bark brown, latex white, watery, copious, lvs. bright green above, l. green below, petioles brownish green; nat. n.: *nátoh*) — Nenoesa, Loc. 11, Garete, very frequent in cleared forest on limestone, alt. 3 m, June 14: *n. 3439* (tree, 16 m high, bole 14 m, diam. 0.30—0.20 m, trunk not straight, lvs. and nat. n. as in n. 3006) — Miangas, on limestone, alt. 5 m, frequent, June 11: *n. 3355* (tree with straight trunk, ± 10 m high, lvs. and nat. n. as in n. 3006, wood estimated for proa construction, reason why this species is also cultivated).

Distribution: Sumatra, Lesser Sunda Isl., Salajar, Boetoeng, Moluccas, Talaud.

Planchonella firma (Miq.) Dub., Ann. Mus. Col. Mars. 20, 1912, 59; H. J. Lam, l.c. 1927, 471.

Var. *α* **typica** H. J. Lam, l.c. 1925, 203.

Kaboeroeang, Loc. 5, Pangangadoan'a grove, cleared old forest, 200 m alt., *n. 3205* (tree, 13 m high, diam. 0.25 m, branchlets l. grey, lvs. shining d. green above, l. green below, fr. l. green, turning red).

Distribution of var. *α*: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Borneo, Celebes, Mindanao, Talaud, New Guinea.

Var. *β* **microcarpa** (Burck), H. J. Lam, Bull. Jard. bot. Buit., Sér. III, 7, 1925, 203.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 180 m, frequent, May 10: *n. 2923* (tree, 22.3 m high, bole 12.3 m, straight, diam. 0.35—0.34 m, bark brown, branchlets l. greyish brown, latex little, white, not sticky, buttresses small, 1.7 m high, 1 m spreading, young lvs. l. brown pubescent; nat. n.: *aléwat'a*); same locality and date, 200 m alt.: *n. 2924* (young tree, bark greenish white; nat. n.: *góémat'oe sángit'a*, i. e. góémat [= *Palaquium luzoniense*] from Sangihe) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 260 m, frequent, May 22: *n. 3099* (tree, 18 m high, bole 14 m, straight, diam. 0.32—0.22 m, bark l. grey, buttresses 2 m high, 0.5 m spreading, lvs. shining d. green above, lighter below as are nerves; nat. n.: *bitáwak batoe*).

Morotai, Goegoeti, G. Ligòjer, old forest on limestone, alt. 100 m, frequent, June 24: *n. 3582* (tree, 25 m high, bole 16 m, straight and cylindrical, diam. 0.35—0.25 m, latex little, white, sticky, lvs. as in preceding nrs.; nat. n.: *otéomawále*).

Distribution of the variety: Flores, Celebes, Talaud, Morotai, Ambon, Saparoea, Kai; of the species: Malay Peninsula to Solomon Islands.

Planchonella nitida (Bl.) Dub., Ann. Mus. Col. Mars. 20, 1912, 62; H. J. Lam, l.c. 1925, 205 and 1927, 472.

Nenoesa, Loc. 10, Merampi, sec. forest near Dampoelis, alt. 20 m, June 13: *n. 3416* (very young tree, 2 m; nat. n.: *arambáhi*).

Distribution: Burma to Flores and New Guinea.

Planchonella obovata (R. Br.) H. J. Lam, l.c. 1925, 209 and 1927, 473.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, frequent on open sunny slope, alt. 400 m, May 31: *n. 3272* (small tree, up to 5 m high, lvs. coriaceous, bright green above, lower side shining brown pubescent when young, more greyish and glabrescent when adult, latex white, fairly copious, branchlets greyish brown; nat. n.: *lolòtan*) — Nenoesa, Loc. 11, Garete, cleared forest on limestone, alt. 5 m, June 14: *n. 3447* (tree, 14 m high, bole 10 m, straight, diam. 0.20—0.13 m, further same annotations as n. 3272, flow. buds l. green, pedicels somewhat brownish; nat. n.: *laládon*).

Distribution: Seychelles to Polynesia.

Planchonella oxyedra (Miq.) Dub., Ann. Mus. Col. Mars. 20, 1912, 50; H. J. Lam, l.c. 1927, 474.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open forest, alt. 350 m, June 2: *n. 3311* (tree, 13 m high, bole 9 m, fairly straight and cylindrical, diam. 0.21—0.13 m, lvs. shining d. green on both sides; nat. n.: *nàki'mpasá'an*; wood used for house construction, but particularly for hatchet helves and for boar hunting spears).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula to Samoa.

Planchonella Vrieseana (Pierre) Dub., Ann. Mus. Col. Mars. 20, 1912, 59; H. J. Lam, l.c. 1927, 467.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, frequent in old forest on riverbank, alt. 20 m, June 29: *n. 3665* (tree, ± 15 m high, trunk fairly straight but with numerous small branches, latex white, not copious, branchlets d. brown, lvs. d. green above, with brown midrib, lighter below, nerves and pedicels brownish green, calyx l. brownish red, corolla with greenish yellow tube and dirty d. red lobes with greenish yellow tips and margins; nat. n.: *litòko*).

Distribution: N. Moluccas (Ceram, Morotai).

EBENACEAE (R. C. Bakhuizen van den Brink)

Diospyros hebecarpa Cunn. in Benth., Fl. Austr. 4, 1869, 286; Bakhuizen van den Brink, Bull. Jard. bot. Buit., Sér. III, 15, 1937, 221.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 260 m, May 23: *n. 3130* (tree, 15 m high, bole 7 m, not straight, diam. 0.25—0.20 m, bark d. coloured, branchlets grey, lvs. bright green on both sides, fr. l. green with green calyx; nat. n.: **aloe'(m)ítoem'a* [Tal.] or *intámin* [Manado Malay]; wood used for construction purposes).

Distribution: Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, New Guinea, Australia, New Caledonia, ? Fiji.

Diospyros maritima Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 669; Bakhuizen van den Brink, l.c. 1937, 265.

Miangas, Loc. 9, G. Batoe, in small grove, alt. 90 m, June 11: *n. 3385* (small tree, ± 4 m high, lvs. d. green; nat. n.: *wawáni*).

Distribution: Sumatra to Solomon Islands.

Diospyros Rumphii Bakh., Gard. Bull. Str. Settl. 8, 1933, 184 and l.c. 1937, 156.

Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, Tonana forest reserve, alt. 25 m, very fre-

quent, May 26: *n. 3179* (young tree, 17 m high, bole 14 m, straight but furrowed, diam. 0.32—0.20 m, heartwood black, in this specimen still very slightly developed, lvs. d. green and shining above, lighter and dull below; nat. n.: *batoelíneh*; wood estimated).

Distribution: N. Celebes, Talaud, Halmahera.

OLEACEAE

Jasminum ?simplicifolium Forst. f., Prodr., 1786, 3.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, skirt of sec. forest, alt. 50 m, May 21: *n. 3086* (twining, flow white).

Distribution: Java, Talaud, Boeroe, Australia, Polynesia.

Jasminum suberosum Holth., nov. spec., *Fig. 9* (p. 223).

Frutex scandens, glabra, rami novelli lenticellis suberosis conspicuis suffulti, vetustiores crasse suberosi. *Folia* opposita vel subopposita, simplicia, 5—17 × 12—15 cm, tenuiter coriacea, suborbicularia, apice breviter acute acuminata, basi truncata, 3—5-nervia, nervi 2 interiores saepe costa aequicrassi. *Paniculae* solitariae vel nonnullae e basi communi ortae, axillares, multiflorae, 12—24 cm longae, bracteis brevibus, acute triangularibus. *Calyx* urceolatus, 0.4 cm longus, margine 5 dentibus suffultus. *Corolla* alba, 1 cm longa, tubo brevi, petalis 5—6 oblongis, apice rotundatis, 0.7 cm longis, basi subhastatis. *Stamina* 0.7 cm longa. Ovarium glabrum, semiglobosum. *Fructus* ignoti.

A glabrous *liana*, climbing to a height of several meters. Branches with conspicuous suberized lenticels when young, the older ones with a thick papillate and furrowed corklayer, e. g. 0.3 cm thick in a branch of 1.2 cm diameter, the cork pale greyish brown. *Leaves* opposite or subopposite, simple, glabrous and shining on either surface, dark green above, pale green below, thin coriaceous, almost circular, 15—17 cm long, 12—15 cm broad, with a short acute acumen, a truncated or rounded base and entire margins, triplinerved or quintuplinerved, but then only the two inner nerves almost as strong as the midrib; petioles 2.5—4 cm long, 0.3 cm thick, curved. *Inflorescences* borne on axillary dwarf shoots, solitary or some together, 12—24 cm long, glabrous and many-flowered, bracts narrowly triangular, acute, about 0.2 cm long, pedicels 2—2.5 cm long, 0.1 cm thick. Flowers glabrous, 1.2 cm long; *calyx* cup-shaped, 0.4 cm long, 0.4—0.5 cm in diameter, with five subulate teeth of about 0.1 cm long; *corolla* white, tube 0.3 cm long, petals 5 or 6, oblong, rounded, 0.7 cm long and 0.4—0.5 cm broad, rounded at the tip, the base subhastate with two small lobes. *Stamens* 0.7 cm long and 0.2 cm broad, anthers acuminate at apex, slightly cordate at base, filaments very short. *Pistil* 0.6 cm long, ovary semiglobular, glabrous, style filiform, stigma with two short and blunt lobes. *Fruit* unknown.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 300 m, May 23: *n. 3140* (with old buds; nat. n.: **a'ároembíran'a*; *type specimen*, L., dupl. in Bz.).

Very characteristic for this species are the suberose branches, the circular leaves and the long panicles. The species shows a very close affinity to *J. aphanodon* Miq. MS. from N. Celebes, but differs from it by the

shorter calyx and the circular leaves; of *J. aphanodon* only scanty material was at our disposal, so that we could not state whether or not the older branches were suberized.

Linociera ramiflora (Roxb.) F.-Vill., Noviss. App., 1880, 128.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 200 m, May 9: *n. 2918* (tree, 6 m, flow. bright yellow).

Distribution: India to Australia.

Myxopyrum ovatum A. W. Hill, Kew Bull., 1910, 41, fig. 3.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, partly cleared old forest, alt. 100 m, April 26: *n. 2619* (liana, several m long, stems quadrangular, the older ones about cylindrical, l. brown, lvs. bright green, peduncles slightly violet, calyx l. green, corolla l. yellow, anthers very l. yellow, fr. green when young, yellowish orange with age; nat. n.: **ápoet'oe aroembíran'a*).

Distribution: Talaud, Kai.

Remarks: The specimen agrees with Hill's description but for the petals, which are up to 4.5 mm long; the leaves are up to 21 cm long. Hill's specimen possessed no fruits. In the present specimen they are almost globose, narrowed towards the base, green when young, yellowish orange with age, black when dry, 1—1.4 cm in diameter, containing one or two globose seeds, which are black when dry and about 0.7 cm in diameter.

LOGANIACEAE

Couthovia celebica Koord., Meded. 's Lands Plantent. 19, 1898, 537.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, Pasir Malap, frequent in forest on river-bank, alt. 20 m, May 13: *n. 2973* (tree, 27 m high, bole 16.2 m, diam. 0.50—0.35 m, bark l. brown, bast white, branchlets grey, spotted, lvs. d. green above, l. green below, nerves and petioles paler, calyx l. green, corolla greenish white, ovary l. green, infl. l. green, fr. green when young; wood used for house construction; nat. n.: *a'asíli*).

Distribution: Celebes, Philippines (Mindoro, Mindanao), Talaud.

Fagraea ?ternatana Miq., Ann. Mus. Bot. Lugd.-Bat. 2, 1865—1866, 217.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open slope, alt. 400 m, May 31: *n. 3264* (tree or large shrub, ± 3 m, flow. white, fragrant, fr. green, turning orange, seeds black; nat. n.: *ténggeh*).

Distribution: Ternate, Talaud.

Geniostoma celebicum Valet., Bull. Inst. Bot. Buitenzorg 12, 1902, 19.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, low sec. forest, alt. 90 m, April 25: *n. 2571* (small straight tree, 6 m high, bark l. greyish brown, fr. l. green; nat. n.: *abólo'a*) — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, alt. 350 m, May 31: *n. 3268* (shrub, ± 3.5 m high, branchlets greyish brown to grey, lvs. dull green, fr. dull l. green) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 260 m, May 23: *n. 3133* (small tree, ± 5 m high, lvs. bright green above, pedicels and buds l. green).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud.

APOCYNACEAE

Alstonia scholaris (L.) R. Br., Mem. Wern. Soc. 1, 1809, 75.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, cleared old forest, alt. 40 m, April 25: *n. 2578* (tree, 20 m, latex white, abundant; nat. n.: **pampoelóéta* or *pamperóéda*).

Distribution: paleotropic.

Alyxia stellata (Forst. f.) Roem. & Schult., Syst. 4, 1819, 439.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, top of G. Piapi, very frequent in low forest, alt. 500 m, June 1: *n. 3289* (liana, several m long, branchlets grey, lvs. l. to rather d. green, fr. l. green when young, black when ripe).

Distribution: tropical Asia to Polynesia.

Cerbera manghas L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 208.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 10 m, April 23: *n. 2486* (tree, 10 m high, low branching, milky juice white, very sticky, lvs. bright green, paler below, calyx and peduncles l. green, sepals white, corolla white, tube l. green, slightly orange at throat, filaments yellow, anthers brown, style greenish white, stigma white, ovary l. green; nat. n.: *limbawóéta*).

Morotai, Loc. 12, frequent in old forest, alt. 50 m, June 20: *n. 3475* (tree, 15 m high, bole 10 m, straight, furrowed, diam. 0.14—0.10 m, milky juice white, watery, lvs. rather d. green above; nat. n.: *rédi*).

Distribution: tropical Asia to Polynesia.

Lepiniopsis ternatensis Valet., Ann. Jard. Bot. Buitenzorg 12, 1895, 252, t. 28.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, partly cleared old forest, alt. 100 m, April 26: *n. 2615* (small tree, 7 m high, bole 4 m, straight, branchlets glabrous, l. grey, milky juice watery, sticky when dry, lvs. d. green above, paler below, fr. bright red; nat. n.: *abá'a*) — Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 150 m, May 7: *n. 2882* (tree, 21 m high, bole 11.3 m, straight, cylindrical, diam. 0.23—0.21 m, bark greyish brown, peduncles green, older parts pale brown, corolla tube orange, tip of bud l. green, ovary l. green, fr. green; nat. n.: *samparoeái* or *tamparoeáoe*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, top of G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 340 m, frequent, May 22: *n. 3101* (tree, ± 12 m high, trunk straight, cylindrical, d. brownish green, fr. yellow with age, fiery red when ripe; nat. n.: *tamparoeáoe*).

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 100 m, June 21: *n. 3516* (tree, 12 m high, bole 6 m, straight, diam. 0.20—0.16 m, bark brown, branches horizontally spreading, short, calyx l. green, corolla in bud with the tube salmon coloured and the lobes greenish white, fr. l. green; nat. n.: *poelosári*); same locality, alt. 200 m, frequent, June 23: *n. 3576* (tree, ± 10 m high, ± 0.15 m diam.; nat. n.: *poelohári*).

Distribution: Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas.

Ochrosia oppositifolia (Lam.) K. Schum. in Engl. & Prantl, Nat. Pflanzenf. 4 pt. 2, 1895, 156.

Nenoesa, Loc. 11, Garete, cleared forest on limestone, alt. 3 m, very frequent, June 14: *n. 3440* (tree, 5 m high, bole 3 m, diam. 0.12—0.10 m, lvs. shining bright green above, dull. l. green below, midrib greenish white, petioles l. yellowish green, calyx and pedicels green, corolla white or l. greenish white, fr. green; nat. n.: *ampáwa*).

Distribution: Ceylon to Malay Archipelago and Micronesia.

Parsonsia Cumingiana A. DC. in DC., Prodr. 8, 1844, 402.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest behind the beach, alt. 5 m, April 23: *n. 2489* (climbing, lvs. l. green, midrib and petioles slightly violet, calyx l. green, margin brown, corolla greenish white, filaments yellowish white, anthers l. brown); Loc. 8, near Dahang, in shrubs on the beach, alt. 0 m, June 4: *n. 3340* (climbing, some m long, branchlets greyish green,

lvs. bright green, pedicels and calyx l. green, corolla yellowish green, disk creamy white, filaments l. yellow, anthers l. brown, style greenish white, ovary l. green; nat. n.: *mamíntak'a*).

Distribution: Java, Borneo, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas.

Rauwolfia amsoniifolia A. DC., Prodr. 8, 1844, 338.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open slope, alt. 350 m, May 31: *n. 3265* (tree, 6 m, flow. greenish white, fr. yellow; nat. n.: *abá'a*); light forest, alt. 250 m, very frequent, June 2: *n. 3316* (small tree, 3 m, flow. and nat. n. as in nr. 3265).

Distribution: Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas (Timor laoet, Kai, Tenimbar), New Guinea.

Rauwolfia javanica Koord. & Val., Booms. Java 1, 1894, 91.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, old forest, alt. 300 m, May 23: *n. 3124* (tree, 16.5 m, flow. white; nat. n.: *ba'aròsa*; wood used for house construction).

Distribution: Java, N. Celebes, Talaud.

ASCLEPIADACEAE

Asclepias curassavica L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 215.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, Liroeng, waste ground behind native premises, alt. 2 m, May 21: *n. 3095* (erect undershrub, lvs. bright green, paler below with greenish white midrib, pedicels and calyx l. green, corolla reddish orange, receptaculum bright yellow, column l. yellow).

Distribution: pantropic.

Dischidia Collyris Wall., Pl. As. Rar. 2, 1831, 36.

Morotai, Loc. 12a, near Wajaboela, in cultivated grounds, alt. 1 m, frequent, June 1: *n. 3684* (epiphytic, flow. white).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, ? Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Moluccas, New Guinea.

Dischidia ?Copelandii Schlecht., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 1, Suppl., 1906, 298.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 80 m, April 24: *n. 2550* (epiphytic).

Distribution: Philippines, Talaud.

Dischidia hirsuta (Bl.) Decne. in DC., Prodr. 8, 1844, 632.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 60 m, May 2: *n. 2737* (epiphytic).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Philippines, Talaud, Ceram.

Gymnema tingens (Roxb.) Spreng., Syst. 1, 1825, 844.

Miangas, Loc. 3, G. Kota, in grove, alt. 90 m, June 11: *n. 3391* (twining, some m long, milky juice white, lvs. bright green, slightly darker above, petioles and pedicels l. green, calyx green, corolla white, filaments dirty green, anthers dirty l. brown, ovary white, fr. green; nat. n.: *sesònoh*).

Distribution: S.E. Asia to Philippines and Moluccas.

Hoya sussuela (Roxb.) Merr., Interpr. Rumph. Herb. Amb., 1917, 438.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, cleared old forest, alt. 120 m, frequent, April 27: *n. 2659* (twining herb, flow. l. green without, shining d. violet red inside; nat. n.: *apobéroe'a*) — Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 80 m, May 2: *n. 2784* (same annotations as n. 2659).

Distribution: Talaud, Ambon.

Tylophora Perrottetiana Decne. in DC., Prodr. 8, 1844, 609.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, forest skirt, alt. 100 m, April 26: *n. 2635* (twining, flow. and fr. l. green) — Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, wayside in sec. forest, alt. 20 m, May 26: *n. 3197* (twining, flow. dirty l. brownish green, fr. green; nat. n.: *mariwoeàn'a*).

Distribution: Philippines, Talaud.

CONVOLVULACEAE (S. J. van Ooststroom)

Ipomoea aquatica Forssk., Fl. Aeg.-Arab., 1775, 44; Van Ooststroom, Blumea 3, 1940, 528.

Salebaboe, Loc. 6, Lota swamp, alt. 5 m, May 28: *n. 3219* procumbent herb, lvs. dull green, calyx and pedicels l. green, corolla, white with violet heart).

Distribution: pantropic.

Ipomoea congesta R. Br., Prodr., 1810, 485; Van Ooststroom, l.c. 500.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, very frequent in sec. forest, alt. 150 m, May 20: *n. 3067* (twining, many m long, calyx green, greenish white with age, corolla almost white without, the inside and the margins violet; nat. n.: *apóékoeng'a*).

Distribution: pantropic.

Ipomoea digitata L., Syst. ed. 10, 1759, 924; Van Ooststroom, l.c. 558.

Nenoesa, Loc. 10, Merampi, in alang-alang field, alt. 100 m, June 13: *n. 3434* (twining, calyx and pedicels green or slightly violet, corolla l. lilac without, violet inside; nat. n.: *ondo*).

Distribution: pantropic.

Ipomoea gracilis R. Br., Prodr., 1810, 484; Van Ooststroom, l.c. 516.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, on gravel bank along K. Bahewa, alt. 15 m, May 15: *n. 3025* (procumbent herb, stems and petioles l. violet-brown, calyx and pedicels l. green, corolla l. lilac outside, the tube darker, violet inside; nat. n.: *bariwoeàn'a*).

Distribution: Madagascar to Polynesia, perhaps also in Mexico and the West Indies.

Ipomoea Pes-caprae (L.) Sweet, Hort. Suburb. Lond., 1818, 35; Van Ooststroom, l.c. 532.

Subspec. **brasiliensis** (L.) Van Ooststroom, l.c. 533.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, south of Beo, very frequent on the beach; April 23: *n. 2479* (procumbent, flow. lilac; nat. n.: *andaliaràn'a*).

Distribution (subspecies and species): pantropic.

Ipomoea tiliacea Choisy in DC., Prodr. 9, 1845, 375.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 80 m, April 24: *n. 2552* (twining, some m long, lvs. l. green, calyx l. green, corolla l. violet without, darker within; nat. n.: *bariwoeàn'a*).

Distribution: tropical America. Recorded by Hallier (Bull. Herb. Boiss. 7, 1899, 49) from W. Africa (Cameroons). The species was not yet recorded from tropical Asia. In hitherto unrecorded material from the Herbarium at Buitenzorg, we (Van Ooststroom) detected the following numbers from New Guinea, which undoubtedly also belong to this species:

North New Guinea, bank of a rivulet near Idenburg river, June 6, 1914, *Feuilletau de Bruyn n. 41*; Meervlakte, Mamberamo, November 20, 1914: *Feuilletau de Bruyn n. 214*; bank of Otken river, near Pionier bivouac, June 26, 1920: *H. J. Lam n. 413*; bank of Idenburg river, August 31, 1920: *H. J. Lam n. 989*; Meervlakte near Motor bivouac, Rouffaer river, 1926: *Docters van Leeuwen n. 11081* — without exact locality, 1926: *Docters van Leeuwen n. 11178.*

Lepistemon urceolatus (R. Br.) F. Muell., Census, 1892, 94.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, sec. forest, alt. 200 m, May 20: *n. 3068* (twining, some m long, lvs. l. green, paler below, dirty violet-brown when young, pedicels and calyx l. green, corolla creamy white).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud, Moluccas (Ceram, Boeroe), New Guinea, Solomon Islands, Australia.

Merremia peltata (L.) Merr., Interpret. Herb. Amb., 1917, 441; Van Ooststroom, Blumea 3, 1939, 352.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, cleared old forest, alt. 100 m, April 26: *n. 2622* (twining, several m long, lvs. green, nerves paler, calyx greenish yellow, corolla bright yellow, filaments, anthers and style very l. yellow, stigma white, ovary green; nat. n.: *boerá'an'a*); skirt of sec. forest, alt. 5 m, June 5: *n. 3352* (same annotations and nat. n. as n. 2622; stems used for temporary binding purposes) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, sec. forest with alang-alang, alt. 220 m, May 23: *n. 3135* (same annotations and nat. n. as n. 2622, fr. greenish white).

Distribution: Madagascar, Mascarenes, Seychelles, Malay Peninsula to Polynesia.

Merremia tridentata (L.) Hall. f., Engl. Bot. Jahrb. 16, 1893, 552; Van Ooststroom, l.c. 1939, 315.

Subspec. **hastata** (Desr.) Van Ooststroom, l.c. 317.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, south of Liroeng, in alang-alang field, alt. 50 m, May 21: *n. 3085* (twining, stem reddish, lvs. l. green, calyx l. green, reddish brown with age, corolla white, reddish violet within, stamens and style white, fr. d. brown) — Nenoesa, Loc. 10, Merampi, near Dampoelis, alang-alang field, alt. 40 m, June 13: *n. 3433* (twining, entire plant l. green, corolla white).

Distribution: East Africa to Australia.

BORAGINACEAE

Cordia Myxa L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 190.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, sec. forest, alt. 60 m, May 20: *n. 3042* (young shoots on rim of culled trunk, ± 6 m high, trunk grey, lvs. bright green above, lower surface, petioles, pedicels and calyx l. green, corolla, stamens, style and stigma white; nat. n.: *nonáng'a*; of the seeds a sort of paper-glue is made).

Distribution: paleotropic.

Ehretia microphylla Lam., Tabl. Enc. 1, 1791—'97, 425.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 5 m, April 28: *n. 2676* (shrub, 2 m high, calyx green, corolla and style white, anthers d. brown; nat. n.: **landíla mèoh*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, sec. forest, alt. 100 m, May 20: *n. 3062* (shrub or small tree, 1—3 m high, branchlets d. brown, lvs. shining d. green above, slightly paler below, fr. fleshy, d. red; nat. n.: **randíla mèoh*) — Miangas, Loc. 9, G. Batoe, small grove, alt. 80 m, June 11: *n. 3363* (shrub, calyx dirty green, corolla white, fr. green; nat. n.: **dandíla*).

Distribution: India to Philippines, New Guinea and Solomon Islands.

Tournefortia argentea L. f., Suppl., 1781, 133.

Salebaboe, Loc. 6, near Moronge, beach, May 28: *n. 3227* (shrub, 1.5 m high, lvs. l. green, silvery shining pubescent on either side, calyx l. green, pubescent, corolla white, base greenish yellow, anthers brown with

white margins, style greenish yellow, stigma brown, ovary l. green, fr. green) — Miangas, Loc. 9, beach, alt. 1 m, June 11: *n. 3369* (tree, ± 4.5 m high, same annotations as n. 3227, filaments greenish white, stigma dirty green; nat. n.: *windoe*).

Distribution: Mauritius to Polynesia.

Tournefortia sarmentosa Lam., Tabl. Enc. 1, 1797, 416.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, forest skirt on recent landslide, alt. 50 m, May 11: *n. 2956* (liana, some m long, lvs. l. green, paler below, branchlets brown, calyx l. green, corolla white, fr. l. green with black stigma; nat. n.: *landèrong'a*).

Morotai, Loc. 12, skirt of old forest, alt. 20 m, June 28: *n. 3641* (liana, ± 10 m long, corolla greenish white, fr. white).

Distribution: Mauritius to Australia.

VERBENACEAE (H. J. Lam and A. D. J. Meeuse)
(cf. Blumea 5, 1942, 66—80)

Avicennia marina (Forssk.) Vierh., Denkschr. Ak. Wiss. Wien 71, 1907, 435; Bakhuizen van den Brink, Bull. Jard. bot. Buit., Sér. III, 3, 1921, 203.

Var. ε **Rumphiana** (Hall. f.) Bakh., l.c. 213, t. 19.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, high mangrove forest, alt. 1 m, very frequent, April 28: *n. 2675* (tree, ± 15 m high, branchlets grey, twigs greyish green tomentose, lvs. dull green above, l. greenish yellow below, calyx l. green, corolla dirty orange, paler without, stamens brown, style d. violet, ovary l. green; nat. n.: *dalita*).

Distribution of the variety: Malay Peninsula, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea; of the species: East Africa to Australia.

Callicarpa candicans (Burm. f.) Hochr., Candollea 5, 1934, 190 (= *C. cana* L.)

Miangas, Loc. 9, P. Baronto, on limestone, alt. 7 m, June 11: *n. 3372* (shrub, ± 1.5 m high, lvs. bright green above, white with l. brown nerves below, pedicels and calyx l. greenish brown, corolla l. violet, darker within, filaments and style l. violet, anthers l. yellow, stigma very l. violet).

Distribution: Mascarenes to Polynesia.

Callicarpa pedunculata R. Br., Prodr., 1810, 513.

Nenoesa, Loc. 10, Merampi, cultivated grounds, alt. 100 m, June 13: *n. 3429* (shrub,± 1 m high, lvs. bright green above, l. green below, calyx l. green, corolla l. violet, filaments l. violet, anthers l. yellow).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula to Australia.

Clerodendrum Buchanani (Roxb.) Walp., Rep. Bot. Syst. 1844, 108 (=. *Cl. Blumeanum* Schau.).

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest behind the beach, alt. 2 m, frequent, April 23: *n. 2485* (shrub, 2—3 m high, lvs. bright green, paler below, calyx, pedicels and corolla carmine, filaments and style pink, anthers dirty red, stigma yellow, fr. green when young, black with age; nat. n.: *pansaráng'a*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, Liroeng, cult. in nat. garden, May 21: *n. 3094* (shrub, 2 m, flow. red, fr. d. green) — Miangas, Loc. 9,

beach, alt. 3 m, June 12: *n. 3414* (shrub, ± 1 m high, same annotations as in n. 2485, stigma d. red, style red; nat. n.: *andaliára*).

Distribution: Sumatra, Banka, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea.

Clerodendrum inerme (L.) Gaertn., Fruct. Sem. 1, 1788, 271.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, beach, alt. 1 m, April 28: *n. 2683* (shrub, 2.5 m high, branches grey, lvs. rather d. green above, calyx l. green, corolla tube greenish white, lobes white, filaments white at base, violet at top, anthers brown, style and stigma violet, young fr. green; nat. n.: *sómbah*).

Distribution: Mascarenes to Polynesia.

Clerodendrum japonicum (Thunb.) Sweet, Hort. Brit., 1826, 322 (= *C. squamatum* Vahl).

Karakelong, Loc. 2, forest on bank of K. Tatamboewe, alt. 50 m, April 30: *n. 2699* (small straight tree, 3.5 m high, trunk 3 m, lvs. rather d. green, calyx greenish white without, bright red within, patent in fr., fr. green); alt. 40 m, May 3: *n. 2775* (same annotations as in n. 2699, calyx and pedicels d. red, corolla orange red, filaments l. red, style d. red).

Distribution: India and China to Japan, Philippines and Moluccas.

Clerodendrum Minahassae Teysm. & Binn., Nat. Tijdschr. Ned. Ind. 25, 1863, 409.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, very frequent in sec. forest, alt. 50 m, May 20: *n. 3047* (small tree, branchlets very l. grey, lvs. dull d. green above, calyx green, corolla l. green when young; nat. n.: *soepángka asoewàn'a*).

Distribution: Celebes, Philippines, Talaud.

Faradaya splendida F. Muell., Fragm. 5, 1865, 21.

Karakelong, Loc. 8, north of Dahang, wayside, alt. 5 m, June 4: *n. 3342* (liana, ± 10 m long, lvs. bright shining green, fr. and calyx greenish white; nat. n.: *latára*).

Distribution: N. Borneo, Talaud, New Guinea, Queensland.

Geunsia pentandra (Roxb.) Merrill, Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 11, 1916, 309.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 100 m, very frequent, April 24: *n. 2523* (tree or shrub, 3—8 m high, bark l. grey, lvs. l. green, calyx l. green, corolla very l. violet, filaments l. violet, anthers violet, style and stigma l. violet, ovary l. green, young fr. shining green; nat. n.: *tananáloep'a*) — Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 7: *n. 2866* (tree, 19 m high, bole 9 m, diam. 0.30—0.21 m, further same annotations as n. 2523; nat. n.: *tananáloep'a*).

Distribution: Siam to New Guinea.

Premna corymbosa (Burm. f.) Rottl. & Willd., Ges. Nat. f. Freunde, Neue Schr. 4, 1803, 187 (= *P. integrifolia* L.).

Karakelong, Loc. 1, beach, alt. 0.50 m, frequent, April 23: *n. 3478* (large, widely branched shrub, 3 m high, lvs. l. green, infl. l. green, corolla greenish white with white hairs, filaments greenish white, anthers white; nat. n.: *sároh*); sec. forest, alt. 50 m, frequent, April 24: *n. 2534* (small tree or large shrub, corolla pale greenish yellow, young fr. l. green; nat. n.: *sároh*) — Miangas, Loc. 9, G. Batoe, open slope, alt. 60 m, frequent, June 11: *n. 3381* (shrub, ± 3 m high, lvs. bright green, calyx and fila-

ments l. green, corolla l. green, lower lip slightly yellow, anthers d. brown; nat. n.: *sároh*).

Distribution: Madagascar to Polynesia.

Stachytarpheta indica (L.) Vahl, Enum. 1, 1804, 206.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, wayside, April 23: *n. 2494* (± prostrate undershrub, calyx l. green, corolla l. blue; nat. n.: *saibóé'a*).

Distribution: India to New Guinea.

LABIATAE

Ajuga bracteosa Benth. in Wall. Pl. As. Rar. 1, 1830, 59.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, south of G. Ajambana, on ladang, alt. 200 m, May 24: *n. 3160* (herb, l. green, corolla white, filaments white, anthers brown, style greenish white, young fr. greenish yellow).

Distribution: Abyssinia, tropical Asia, Japan, Philippines, Celebes, Talaud, Ternate.

Hyptis capitata Jacq., Ic. Pl. Rar. 1, 1781—1786, t. 114.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, wayside, alt. 5 m, April 23: *n. 2496* (herb, stem d. violet at base, calyx l. green, corolla white; nat. n.: **áring kámbing*).

Distribution: a native of Mexico, introduced in Formosa, Micronesia, Philippines, Celebes, Talaud, Moluccas and Java.

SOLANACEAE

Physalis minima L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 183.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, gravel bank in K. Bahewa, alt. 25 m, May 16: *n. 3032* (herb, lvs. l. green, paler below, petioles and stem slightly reddish, calyx l. green; nat. n.: *daráteh*).

Distribution: pantropic.

Solanum nigrum L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 186.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, bank of K. Bahewa, alt. 40 m, May 4: *n. 2836* (herb, lvs. l. green, stem brownish green, calyx l. green, corolla white, anthers yellow, stigma green, young fr. green).

Distribution: cosmopolitic.

Solanum torvum Sw., Prodr., 1788, 47.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, bank of K. Bahewa, recent landslide, alt. 30 m, May 3: *n. 2772* (herb, lvs. d. green above, calyx green, corolla white, anthers yellow, style greenish white, stigma white, young fr. green; the fruits are eaten boiled; nat. n.: *sangkiróéman oe *wáwi*).

Distribution: pantropic.

SCROPHULARIACEAE

Ilysanthes antipoda (L.) Merr., Interpret. Herb. Amb., 1917, 467.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 10 m, April 25: *n. 2593* (herb, more or less prostrate, l. green, corolla tube white, lobes l. violet; nat. n.: *paláni wawíra*).

Lindernia crustacea (L.) F. Muell., Census, 1882, 97.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, in *Caladium* plantation, alt. 150 m, May 20: *n. 3053* (herb, stems expanded, prostrate, lvs. and stems bright green, calyx l. green, corolla whitish pink, ripe fr. and fruiting calyx d. reddish green).

Distribution: paleotropic.

Scoparia dulcis L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 116.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, wayside, alt. 10 m, April 23: *n. 2482* (undershrub, more or less creeping, lvs. l. green, calyx l. green, corolla white, filaments white, anthers and stigma l. green, style l. violet, fr. green when young, brown with age; nat. n.: **ambóęranga'mbábi*).

Distribution: pantropic.

BIGNONIACEAE

Dolichandrone spathacea (L. f.) K. Schum., Fl. Kais. Wilh. Land, 1889, 123; Van Steenis, Bull. Jard. bot. Buit. Sér. III, 10, 1928, 227.

Salebaboe, Loc. 6, drier parts of Lota swamp near Moronge, alt. 5 m, frequent, May 28: *n. 3225* (small tree with short and heavy trunk and ascending branches, 6 m high, diam. 1.43 m, flow. white with a strong hyacinth-odour, corolla tube yellowish green, fr. d. green, turning brown when drying; nat. n.: *ansarángi*).

Distribution: India to Philippines and New Guinea.

GESNERIACEAE

Cyrtandra ?capitellata Clarke in DC., Mon. Phan. 5, 1883—1887, 259.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, very frequent, alt. 100 m, April 30: *n. 2697* (undershrub, 2.2 m, flow. dirty yellowish white).

Distribution: Talaud, Ternate.

Cyrtandra coccinea Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 772.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, riverbank, alt. 50 m, May 2: *n. 2744* (herb or undershrub, up to 3 m, flow. red, protandrous, young fr. l. green).

Distribution: Java, Celebes, Talaud, Ceram, Timor.

Cyrtandra ?pallida Elm., Leafl. Phil. Bot. 2, 1908, 559.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 50 m, June 20: *n. 3476* (shrub, 1 m, lvs. d. violet below, flow. white, fr. dirty violet).

Distribution: Philippines (Negros, Mindanao), Morotai.

Trichosporum radicans (Jack) Nees, Trans. Linn. Soc. 14, 1823, 43.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, riverbank, alt. 50 m, May 2: *n. 2741* (epiphytic, flow. carmine).

Distribution: Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Talaud.

ACANTHACEAE (C. E. B. Bremekamp)

Acanthus ilicifolius L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 639.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, landside of mangrove, frequent, April 23: *n. 2475* (shrub, 2 m high, lvs. bright green, paler below, calyx l. green, corolla and filaments white, fr. green; nat. n.: *lalónda *ésat'a*; specimens with spineless leaves are called *lalónda *wawíne*).

Distribution: paleotropic.

Remarks: Probably *A. ebracteatus* Vahl is a variety of the present species.

Graptophyllum pictum (L.) Griff., Notul. 4, 1854, 139.

Karakelong, Loc. 8, north of Dahang, wayside, alt. 5 m, June 4: *n. 3341* (shrub, ± 1.5 m high, lvs. l. green, calyx green, corolla d. violet, the smaller anthers l. violet, the larger ones dirty violet brown as is stigma, ovary l. green; leaves mixed with a poultice of rice are used against framboesia; nat. n.: *pampára rawíran'a*).

Distribution: possibly a native of New Guinea (the genus is Australian-Polynesian), now pantropic.

Hemigraphis alternata (Burm.) T. And., Journ. Linn. Soc. 7, 114, 1864 syn. excl. — *Ruellia alternata* Burm., Fl. Ind., 1768, 135 — *Ruellia colorata* Bl., Bijdr., 1826, 795 — *Hemigraphis colorata* (Bl.) Hallier f., Abh. Kais. Leop.-Car. Akad. Naturf. 70, 1897, 199, t. IX, fig. 1 and 2 — (non *H. alternata* [Burm.] T. And. apud Clarke in King et Gamble, Mat. Fl. Mal. Pen. in Journ. As. Soc. Beng. 74, 2, 1907, 653, nec apud auctores alios qui postea de plantis asiaticis tractaverunt, nam species eorum est *H. Blumeana* [N. ab E.] T. And.).

Kaboeroeang, Loc. 5, cleared old forest, alt. 60 m, May 27: *n. 3215* (herb, prostrate, stems rooting, petioles and stems dirty reddish violet, lvs. dirty green above, d. reddish violet below, nerves darker, calyx and bracts d. violet, corolla white).

Distribution: possibly originally from eastern Malaysia; now cultivated in many tropical countries.

Remarks: Anderson l. c. identified *Ruellia alternata* Burm. with *R. Blumeana* N. ab E., but as Burman described the leaves of his plant as "oblongo-cordatis", whereas in *R. Blumeana* they are lanceolate, it appeared to me that this could not be right. I (Bremekamp) therefore asked Prof. Hochreutiner to compare for me Burman's type with that of the other species, which are both in the Herbarium DeCandolleanum. Prof. Hochreutiner replied that he had studied this problem already some years ago, and kindly sent me an unpublished paper in which he had laid down the results of his investigation. The latter are summarized in the synonymy given above. I wish to express here my thanks to Prof. Hochreutiner for his permission to make use of his notes.

Burman obtained his material of this species from Java, and quoted synonyms from Rumphius and Van Rheede, but Van Rheede's plant is doubtless a *Scrophulariacea*, and among Rumphius's *Hemigraphis* species (*Prunella domestica* and *P. silvestris*) not one fits the description of *H. alternata*. This species is now everywhere in tropical countries grown as a garden plant, but as it is apparently everywhere sterile, its origin remains uncertain. In Java it is, as Blume already pointed out, never found in the jungle, and this doubtless applies also to most of the other parts of the country in which up to now it has been collected. Where it has been found some distance from the next dwelling, it grew perhaps always on the site of a former settlement. As it belongs to the same group as the other species enumerated in this paper, and resembles in several respects *H. Rumphii*, it may have come from the eastern part of the Malay Archipelago.

Hemigraphis ceramensis Brem., nov. spec. (typus: *Kornassi 60*).

Herba e basi repente ascendens. *Caulis ramique* primum pilis retrorsis

dense hispidi, deinde plus minusve glabrescentes, internodiis bisulcatis et subcostatis. *Folia* petiolo 5—15 mm longo, pilis suberectis primum dense hispido munita; lamina lanceolata 3—5 cm longa et 0.6—1.2 cm lata, subacuta vel subcontracta, margine integra, supra praesertim costa setulis paucis, mox deciduis sparsa, subtus costa nervisque ut margine setulis parvis scabridula, cystolithis utrimque sed praesertim supra conspicuis, nervis utroque latere costae plerumque 5. *Spicae* solitariae, plerumque mox a ramulis uno vel duobus ex axillis foliorum supremorum orientibus superatae; pedunculus gracillimus 3—6 cm longus, subglaber; rhachis ultimo usque ad 4.5 cm longa; bracteae 4- vel 5-parae, lineari-oblanceolatae, infimae usque ad 2 cm longae, aliae 1 cm longae et 2 mm latae, subobtusae, margine et facie inferiore costae setulis aliquibus parvis ciliolatae, ceterum glabrae, persistentes; flores in axillis bractearum plerumque solitarii, ebracteolati. *Calyx* 8 mm longus, 5-carinatus, lobis angustissime triangularibus margine ciliolatis, ceterum subglabris. *Corolla* 13 mm longa, extus faucibus lobisque puberulo-pubescens, tubo 4.5 mm, faucibus 5 mm, lobis ovatis 3.5 mm longis. *Stamina* filamentis glabris. Granula pollinis breviter ellipsoidea 32 longa et 26 μ diam., virgis minutis granulatis 21 munita. *Ovarium* apice comatum, quoque loculo ovulis 5; stylus hirtellus. *Capsula* 10-seminalis. *Semina* brunnea, parvo-areolata.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest on riverbank, alt. 50 m, May 1: *n. 2712* (herb, lvs. dull green, l. green below, calyx very l. green, corolla, filaments, anthers, style and stigma white).

Ceram, in the north at Wai Toehoe, alt. 80 m: *Kornassi* (Exped. *Rutten*) *60* (U., *typus*; L., dupl. typi); in the south-east at Kotta, alt. 100—200 m: *id. 1014* (U.).

Distribution: Ceram, Talaud.

Remarks: Like all the other *Hemigraphis* species collected in Talaud, this plant belongs to a group which finds its main distribution in the Philippine Islands, the Moluccas and New Guinea. Outside this area it is represented in Celebes by two species and in Borneo by one. The group is characterized by the absence of bracteoles and by very small, shortly ellipsoidal pollen grains provided with 21 or more nearly smooth or minutely granulated bands. The species with the widest distribution in this group is *H. primulifolia* (N. ab E.) F. Vill., which occurs in the whole of Celebes and everywhere in the Philippine Islands and in the Moluccas, but is not yet with certainty known from New Guinea.

Hemigraphis lanceolata Merrill, Phil. Journ. Sc. 20, 1922, 452.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, sec. forest, alt. 100 m, May 20: *n. 3059* (herb, stems, bracts and calyx reddish, lvs. bright green above, midrib reddish, d. reddish violet below, corolla dirty pink).

Distribution: N. Celebes, Philippines, Talaud.

Remark: This species comes very near to *H. stenophylla* Hallier f. from Celebes and Morotai, *H. angustifolia* Hallier f. from Ambon and Ternate and *H. novoguineënsis* Brem. inedit. from New Guinea.

Hemigraphis Rumphii Brem., nov. spec. (typus: *Teysmann s. n.* [Wai], L.) — prob. *Prunella silvestris rubra* Rumphius, Herb. Ambon. Lib. X, p. 32, Tab. XIII, fig. 3 — *Hemigraphis prostrata* Hallier f., Abh. Kais.

Leop.-Car. Akad. Naturf. 70, 1897, 202, nom. conf. quoad specimina moluccana infra citata.

Herba ascendens vel suberecta. *Caulis ramique* primum breviter et sparse pubescentes, deinde glabrescentes, primum bi- vel quadrisulcati. *Folia* petiolo gracili 1—4 cm longo, sparse et breviter pubescente munita; lamina ovata 4—12 cm longa et 2.2—5.5 cm lata, obtusa, basi ad petiolum subito contracta, margine irregulariter grande repando-dentata et incurvata, subcoriacea, supra saturate viridis, subtus rubro-violacea, supra primum sparse scabridula, mox glabrescens tamen, nitidula, subtus costa nervisque sparse et breviter pubescens, ceterum glabra, cystolithis utrimque numerosis, sed supra majoribus et magis conspicuis, nervis utroque latere costae 5—6. *Spicae* plerumque in triades dispositae, densae et multiflorae; pedunculus gracilis 1—2 cm longus, pilis brevibus cum aliquibus longioribus mixtis vestitus; rhachis subglabra; bracteae ovatae vel ovato-lanceolatae 10—15 mm longae et 4—8 mm latae, subobtusae, margine et interdum costa pilis longis fugacibus ciliatae, ceterum glabrae, persistentes, infimae plerumque flores tres, medianae flores duos superpositos, superiores flores suffulgentes; flores ebracteolati. *Calyx* 9 mm longus, fructu accrescens, 5-carinatus, lobis anguste triangularibus acutis, costa et margine pilis brevibus cum aliquibus longioribus mixtis ciliatis, ceterum glabris. *Corolla* alba 21 mm longa, tubo 8 mm, faucibus 9 mm, lobis rotundatis, extus breviter pubescentibus 4 mm longis. *Stamina* filamentis glabris, longioribus 3 mm, brevioribus 1.2 mm longis; antherae 1.5 mm longae thecis basi muticis. Staminodium minimum. Granula pollinis breviter ellipsoidea 40 μ longa et 28 μ diam., virgis minute granulatis 21 munita. *Ovarium* dimidio superiore pubescens, apice comatum, quoque loculo ovulis 6; stylus hirtellus. *Capsula* subglabra, seminibus 10—12. *Semina* brunnea, parvo-areolata, extra areolam pilis annulatis brevibus vestita.

Ambon, Wai: *Teysmann s.n.* (L., *typus*) — Saparoea, *Teysmann 5024* (U.) — Ceram, Kaibobo: *Forsten s.n.* (L.); *De Vriese & Teysmann s.n.* (L.) — Tidore, B. Mala-mala, alt. 850 m: *Lam 3752* (Bz.) — Ternate: *Forsten s.n.* (L.).

Var. **angustifolia** Brem., nov. var. (typus: *Kornassi 132*).

Cauli repente, foliis lineari-lanceolatis, 5.5—6 cm longis et 1.2—1.5 cm latis, basi acutis, margine undulatis, supra opacis, bracteis angustioribus a typo recedens.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, bank of rivulet, alt. 100 m, April 27: *n. 2669* (herb, stem more or less prostrate, lvs. green above, l. green below, old lvs. reddish, calyx l. yellowish green, corolla white).

Ceram, Kaloa, alt. 80 m: *Kornassi* (Exped. *Rutten*) *132* (L., *typus*).

Distribution of the variety: Ceram, Talaud.

Var. **gracilis** Brem., nov. var. (typus: *Kornassi 1132*, L.) — *H. reptans* (Forst.) Engl. ex K. Sch. var. *glaucescens* Hallier f. in errore apud Merrill, Interpr. Herb. Amb. et Robinson in schedula "Plantae Rumphianae Amboinenses n. 100".

Foliis ovato-oblongis, vix repandis, minoribus, floribus in axillis bractearum fere semper solitariis, granulis pollinis minoribus a typo recedens.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, sec. forest, alt. 100 m, May 20:

n. 3058 (herb, lvs. d. green above, very l. green below, calyx l. green, corolla white, stem and bracts green, slightly reddish).

Ambon, Wai Batoe Gantoeng: *Kornassi* (Exped. *Rutten*) *1132* (L., *typus*; U., dupl. typi); Ema: *Teysmann s. n.* (L.); sine loc.: *Robinson*, Plantae Rumphianae Amboinenses 100 (L.) — Ceram, Hatoemeten, alt. 0 m: *Kornassi* (Exped. *Rutten*) *817* (L., U.) — Boano (near Ceram), alt. 0—200 m: *id. 1294* (U.).

Distribution of the variety: Talaud, Ceram, Ambon.

Remarks: The pollen grains of this variety measure but 33 μ × 25 μ; the seeds are provided with a larger areola and somewhat longer hairs than those of the main form. It is not impossible that further study, for which more complete material will be required, will show that it should be raised to specific rank. This applies also to the preceding variety.

Var. **pubescens** Brem., nov. var. (typus: *Lam 3560*).

Caulibus petiolisque primum densissime, deinde satis dense pubescentibus, foliis supra setulis persistentibus sparse, subtus costa nervisque dense, inter nervos minus dense pubescentibus, bracteis et calyce extus densius pubescentibus a typo recedens.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 130 m, June 22: *n. 3560* (herb, lvs. dull d. green above, l. green below, calyx l. green, slightly reddish, corolla white, slightly reddish within, stamens, style and stigma white; *typus*, L., dupl. Bz.).

Distribution of the variety: Morotai, of the species: Talaud, Moluccas.

Remark: The leaves of the form accepted above as the type of the species are purple below.

Hemigraphis stenophylla Hall. f., Nov. Act. Acad. Nat. Cur. 70, 1897, 203.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Goegoeti, many specimens together on riverbank, alt. 40 m, June 26: *n. 3623* (lvs. d. green above, l. green below, calyx l. green, tube of corolla white, l. brown above, lobes l. violet, young fr. l. green).

Distribution: N. Celebes, Morotai.

Hemigraphis undulata Brem., nov. spec. (typus: *Lam 3398*).

Herba repens. *Caulis ramique* graciles, vix 1.5 mm diam., subteretes, leviter bisulcati, primum densius, deinde sparse pubescentes, internodiis usque ad 5 cm longis; rami floriferi ascendentes. *Folia* petiolo 4—20 mm longo, densius et longe pubescente munita; lamina foliorum majorum ovata, foliorum minorum apice ramorum congestorum ovato-orbicularis, 10—28 mm longa et 8—17 mm lata, obtusa, basi rotundata vel subcordata, margine crenata et conspicue undulata, supra setulis basi incrassatis scabridula, subtus costa nervisque densius, inter nervos sparse pubescens, cystolithis vix conspicuis, vivo utrimque laete viridis, nervis subtus tamen subviolaceis, nervis utroque latere costa 4—5. *Spicae* 1—1.5 cm longae; pedunculus 3 mm longus; bracteae infimae foliaceae, ellipticae, circ. 8 mm longae, basi acutae, nervis utroque latere costae 3 munitae, aliae lineari-oblanceolatae, 6—8 mm longae et 2 mm latae, margine longe sed appresse ciliatae, supra pilis similioribus sparse, subtus costa breviter pubescentes; flores in axillis bractearum solitarii, ebracteolati. *Calyx* viridis 8 mm longus, 5-carinatus,

lobis anguste triangularibus ciliatis. *Corolla* alba 10 mm longa, extus faucibus lobisque puberula, tubo 4 mm longo, faucibus tubo aequilongis, lobis rotundatis 2 mm longis. *Stamina* filamentis glabris, exterioribus 1.8 mm longis, interioribus 0.7 mm longis; antherae 1.4 mm longae, thecis basi muticis. Granula pollinis breviter ellipsoidea 39 μ longa et 29 μ diam., virgis minute granulatis 21 munita. *Ovarium* 1.7 mm altum, apice comatum, quoque loculo ovulis 4—5; stylus sparse hirtellus. *Capsula* nondum nota.

Miangas, Loc. 9, G. Soro, open grass-slope, alt. 60 m, June 11: *n. 3398* (creeping herb, lvs. l. green, nerves slightly violet below, calyx l. green, corolla white; nat. n.: *arompéna*; *typus*, L., dupl. Bz.).

Distribution: endemic, but related to the wider spread *H. primulifolia* (N. ab E.) F. Vill.

Hygrophila salicifolia (Vahl) Nees in Wall., Pl. As. Rar. 3, 1832, 81.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, swampy grounds, alt. 20 m, April 25: *n. 2597* (lvs. l. green, stems paler, calyx greenish white, corolla white; nat. n.: *saewóé'a óétan*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 6, Lota swamp near Moronge, alt. 5 m, May 28: *n. 3218* (herb, lvs. dull green, paler below, midrib paler, calyx tube l. green, lobes d. green, corolla white, lip l. greenish yellow with l. violet tip, filaments and connective white, anthers violet, style and stigma white, fr. green).

Distribution: India and China to Philippines, New Guinea and Australia. The distribution of the species is not perfectly certain; some forms now included in the species perhaps have to be considered distinct species.

Lepidagathis Robinsonii Merr., Phil. Journ. Sci. Bot. 11, 1916, 314.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, very frequent in sec. forest, alt. 100 m, May 20: *n. 3049* (herb, 20—100 cm high, lvs. shining d. green above, paler below, petioles and stems often violet reddish brown, bracts green, slightly reddish, calyx l. green, corolla white).

Distribution: Talaud, Ambon.

Peristrophe bivalvis (L.) Merr., Interpret. Herb. Amb., 1917, 476.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 5 m, April 28: *n. 2678* (undershrub, lvs. bright green, bracts green, calyx almost white, corolla, filaments and style white, anthers very l. brown) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, sec. forest, alt. 100 m, May 20: *n. 3055* (herb, entire plant d. green, calyx greenish white, corolla, stamens and pistil white).

Distribution: India and China to Malaysia, often cultivated.

RUBIACEAE (C. E. B. Bremekamp)

Anthocephalus macrophyllus (Roxb.) Havil., Journ. Linn. Soc. Bot. 33, 1897, 23.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, bank of K. Bahewa, alt. 30 m, very frequent, May 15: *n. 3030* (straight tree, ± 15 m high, trunk cylindrical, brown, branchlets brown, lvs. d. green above, l. green below, nerves still paler, peduncle green, infl. creamy white, fragrant; wood used for house and proa construction; nat. n.: *awá'a*).

Distribution: Talaud, Ambon.

Antirrhoea microphylla (Bartl.) Merr., Enum. Phil. Fl. Pl. 3, 1923, 540.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, alt. 350 m, frequent, May 31: *n. 3260* (tree, ± 3 m high, lvs. l. green, branchlets almost white, calyx and corolla dirty red, silvery haired, fr. dirty yellowish pink, dirty violet with age; nat. n.: *omín'a*).

Distribution: Philippines, Talaud.

Argostemma prob. nov. spec.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, bank of K. Tatamboewe, alt. 50 m, May 7: *n. 2890* (herb, lvs. d. green above, l. green below, petioles slightly succulent, stem, peduncle and calyx l. green, corolla white, flow. and buds pendulous, fr. erect).

Remarks: This species is closely related to the Philippine species *A. Neesianum* Walp., *A. solaniflorum* Elm. and *A. Wallichii* Walp., which all are closely related to *A. montanum* Bl. from Java and Sumatra. Only a monographer can decide here.

Canthium prob. nov. spec.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, top of G. Piapi, low forest, alt. 500 m, June 1: *n. 3293* (small tree, 6 m high, bole 3 m, lvs. bright green, paler below, petioles l. yellowish green, pedicels and calyx green, buds l. green); open forest, alt. 350 m, June 2: *n. 3310* (straight tree, trunk cylindrical, 13 m high, bole 8 m, diam. 0.22—0.15 m, lvs. more or less shining, d. green above, corolla greenish white, anthers d. red, style greenish white, stigma white).

Remarks: Most closely related to Moluccan species.

Chasalia curviflora (Wall.) Thw., Enum. Pl. Zeyl., 1858—'64, 150.

Kaboeroeang, Loc. 5, sec. forest, May 27: *n. 3207* (shrub, 1.5 m high, lvs. shining d. green above, l. green below, infl. greenish white, fr. black, shining, pedicels red; nat. n.: *boenála*).

Distribution: India, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Philippines, Talaud.

Dolicholobium prob. nov. spec.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, frequent in old forest, alt. 70 m, May 4: *n. 2812* (small tree, lvs. d. green above, paler below, midrib and stipules l. green, pedicels and fr. l. greenish yellow).

Remarks: By the many-nerved leaves and the size of the stipules this species shows more resemblance with the species from New Guinea, than with those from the Philippines. The genus is only known from the Philippines, the Moluccas (Tidore), New Guinea and Polynesia. During the same expedition a specimen was collected in Tidore (*Lam n. 3776*), which is undoubtedly conspecific with the specimen from Karakelong.

Guettarda speciosa L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 991.

Nenoesa, Loc. 11, Garete, cleared forest on limestone, alt. 5 m, frequent, June 14: *n. 3445* (small tree, 3.5 m high, bole 2 m, diam. 0.12—0.10 m, lvs. bright green above, paler below, nerves l. yellowish green, petioles reddish, bracts reddish green, calyx l. green, corolla tube l. green, lobes white; wood used for proa construction; nat. n.: *araróéra*).

Distribution: pantropic.

Gynochthodes prob. nov. spec.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, old forest, alt. 100 m, June 3: *n. 3332* (liana, ± 2 m long, lvs. shining d. green, l. green below, petioles

and nerves yellowish green, calyx and pedicels l. green, tube of corolla greenish white, lobes white, filaments greenish white, anthers black, style greenish white, stigma greenish yellow, ovary l. green, fr. shining d. green; nat. n.: *poendángi*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, sec. forest, alt. 220 m, May 23: *n. 3137* (liana, ± 10 m high, lvs. shining d. green above, lower surface and petioles paler, calyx and pedicels l. green, corolla white, filaments white, anthers black, ovary l. green).

Remarks: Easily distinguishable from all described species of this genus by the distinctly racemose inflorescences, probably nearest to Philippine species.

Hedyotis vestita R. Br. ex G. Don, Gen. Syst. 3, 1834, 526.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, ladang, alt. 200 m, May 21: *n. 3080* (herb, lvs. l. green, petioles, stem, calyx and ovary very l. green, corolla l. violet).

Distribution: India, S. China and Malay Peninsula to Philippines and Moluccas.

Hydnophytum amboinense Becc., Malesia 2, 1884, 138.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 250 m, May 8: *n. 2915* (epiphytic, tuber d. brown without, white within, cavities reddish brown, lvs. yellowish green, paler below, young fr. green, orange-yellow when ripe); Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, alt. 450 m, May 31: *n. 3283* (epiphytic, tuber brownish grey without, white within, cavities brown, lvs. dull green, calyx and corolla l. green in bud, young fr. l. green or greenish white, orange when ripe).

Distribution: Talaud, Moluccas.

Hydnophytum inerme (Gaud.) Brem., comb. nov. — *Myrmecodia inermis* Gaud., Freyc. Voy. Bot., 1826, p. 472, t. 95.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 150 m, May 11: *n. 2963* (epiphytic, branchlets brown, tuber l. grey without, white within, cavities bright brown, lvs. d. green above, l. green below, fr. green).

Distribution: Rawah (islet near W. New Guinea) and N.E. New Guinea, Talaud.

Remarks: This specimen belongs to Beccari's *Hydnophytum Gaudichaudii*; as Beccari based his species on the type of Gaudichaud's *Myrmecodia inermis*, the name of the species has to be *Hydnophytum inerme* (Gaud.).

Hydnophytum ?philippinense Becc., Malesia 2, 1884, 125.

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 130 m, very frequent, June 22: *n. 3543* (epiphytic, sessile or pendulous, branchlets brown, tuber greyish brown without, white within, cavities bright brown, lvs. bright green, corolla white, young fr. green; nat. n.: *bóékoh-bóékoh*).

Distribution: Philippines, Morotai.

Remark: As the flowers are lacking, the identification is not fully certain.

Ixora talaudensis Brem. nov. spec. subgeneris *Eu-ixorae*, sectionis *Ixorastri*, series *Macrothyrsarum* a speciebus aliis series huius foliis longius petiolatis, latioribus, nervis pluribus munitis distinguenda, inflorescentia distincte pedunculata uberrima ad *I. tidorensem* accedens, foliis magnis, pedunculo basi foliis rudimentariis munito *I. longifoliae* similior.

Folia petiolo 20 mm longo munita; lamina oblonga 17—22 cm longa et 6—10 cm lata, apice caudato-acuminata et mucronata, basi contracta et conduplicata, herbacea, subopaca, laete viridis, sicc. supra olivaceo-brunnea, subtus dilute brunnea, costa basin versus impressa, nervis utroque latere 17—19 subtus prominulis, reticulatione satis densa subtus etiam prominula. *Stipulae* truncatae, arista quam vagina breviore munitae. *Inflorescentia* laxa, glabra, e floribus circ. 200 composita. Pedunculus 8—20 mm longus, basi foliis rudimentariis munitus et internodio 2—6 mm longo vel interdum internodiis duobus brevioribus folia rudimentaria gerentibus praecessus. Internodia basalia axis et ramulorum infimorum 20—40 mm longa. Ramuli infimi foliis rudimentariis vel ut alii bracteis ovatis acuminatis patentibus suffulti; bracteae ramulorum ceterorum peripheriam versus magnitudine decrescentes, numquam tamen agnoscendae. Bracteolae basi contracta ovarii insertae et eo breviores, ovato-triangulares. *Flores* laterales triadum pedicellis 1—2.5 mm longis instructi; flores centrales sessiles. *Ovarium* 1.3 mm altum. *Calyx* tubo 0.4—0.5 mm alto, lobis late ovatis tubo subaequilongis, subacutis. *Corolla* tubo 3.7—4.0 cm longo, lobis 7 mm longis et 4 mm latis. *Stamina* filamentis 0.8 mm, antheris 4 mm longis. *Stylus* parte exserta stigmatibus 1.5 mm longis comprehensis 3.5 mm longa. *Drupa* globosa.

K a r a k e l o n g, Loc. 1, shady place in sec. forest, alt. 90 m, April 24: *n. 2547* (erect shrub, 3.5 m high, peduncles and calyx d. carmine, corolla tube bright carmine, lobes orange red, young fr. green with red apex; nat. n.: *sóéwing'a*; *typus*, L., dupl. Bz.) — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, Pananasaran'a grove, open forest, alt. 350 m, June 2: *n. 3307* (shrub of ± 2.5 m high, infrutescences fiery red, young fr. pale green, black when ripe; nat. n.: *sóéwing'a*) — K a b o e r o e a n g, Loc. 4, frequent in sec. forest, alt. 20 m, May 26: *n. 3185* (shrub, ± 3 m high, twigs often reddish, entire infl. beautiful orange-red; nat. n.: *sóéwing'a*).

R e m a r k s: As most *Ixora* species are confined to small areas, it is, from a geographical point of view, preferable to study the distribution of the series to which they belong. The series *Macrothyrsae* occurs in Celebes and in the Moluccan and Philippine Islands; its occurrence "further eastwards" (Brem., in Bull. Jard. Bot. Buitenzorg, Sér. III, 14, 1937, 221) is doubtful: the plant described from the Carolines is probably an introduced species. The specimen of *Ixora filipes* Valet. (*Lam n. 2423*), erroneously mentioned by Bremekamp (l. c., 1937, 308) from the Talaud Islands, was actually collected in the Minahasa (North Celebes).

Knoxia corymbosa Willd., Sp. Pl. 1, 1797, 582.

N e n o e s a, Loc. 10, Merampi, G. Maranggi, alang-alang field, alt. 170 m, June 13: *n. 3436* (undershrub, lvs. l. green, stem brownish, calyx l. green, corolla white, fr. l. green).

D i s t r i b u t i o n: India to Philippines and Australia.

R e m a r k: What at present is known as *Knoxia corymbosa* is a mixture of many species. The specimens from India, for instance, are distinctly different from those from Malaysia.

Lachnostoma apodum (Valet.), Brem., comb. nov. — *Ixora apoda* Valet., Ic. Bogor. 4, 1912, t. 341.

M o r o t a i, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 50 m, June 20: *n. 3469* (shrub, ± 0.50 m high, lvs. d. green above, l. green below, fr. bright red in maturity).

Distribution: Moluccas (Morotai, Obi, Ceram, Kai?). The genus is known from the Malay Peninsula, Sumatra, Java, Borneo and the Moluccas.

Morinda citrifolia L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 176.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 10 m, frequent, April 23: *n. 2492* (shrub or small tree, 2.5 m high, lvs. bright green, stipules green, calyx l. green, tube of corolla greenish white, lobes white, fr. l. green; formerly the roots were used for the production of a yellow dye; nat. n.: *mangkóédoe*) — Miangas, Loc. 9, G. Batoe, in small grove, alt. 80 m, June 11: *n. 3357* (shrub, ± 2 m high, lvs. bright green, paler below, petioles and midrib below greenish white, calyx l. green, corolla greenish white, fr. l. green, almost white with age; nat. n.: *séra*).

Distribution: India to Polynesia.

Morinda prob. nov. spec.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open sunny slope, alt. 400 m, May 31: *n. 3270* (liana, lvs. coriaceous, l. green, young fr. green, orange when ripe).

Remarks: This species belongs to the group, which is described by Blume under the generic name *Sphaerophora*; it is most closely related to *M. celebica* Miq. from Indo China, Borneo, Celebes and the Philippines, to *M. Bartlingii* Elm. from Palawan, to *M. parvifolia* Bartl. ex DC. from Indo China, S. China, Formosa and the Philippines, to *M. philippinensis* Elm. from Palawan, Mindoro and Sibuyan and to *M. volubilis* (Blco) Merr. from Luzon.

Mussaenda aff. **philippica** A. Rich., Mém. Soc. Hist. Nat. Paris 5, 1834, 245.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 10 m, April 23: *n. 2495* (± climbing shrub, 6 m high, calyx greenish white, enlarged lobe almost white, corolla with tube and lobes l. green without, lobes orange within, fr. green; nat. n.: *lalagàlan*) — Loc. 2, bank of K. Tatamboewe, alt. 50 m, May 3: *n. 2774* (climbing, several m long, lvs. l. green, calyx green, lobes paler, corolla orange with yellow margin within, tube and outside l. green); alt. 40 m, May 12: *n. 2964* (same annotations as n. 2774; nat. n.: *lóéngkang*).

Distribution: Philippines, Talaud.

Remarks: The species is closely related to *M. sericea* Bl. and *M. Forsteniana* Miq. from the Moluccas.

Mycetia ?javanica (Bl.) Korth., Ned. Kruidk. Arch. 12, pt. 2, 1851, 118.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 320 m, May 23: *n. 3148* (lvs. l. green, paler below, petioles very l. green, fr. fleshy, white).

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, old forest, alt. 20 m, June 29: *n. 3677* (shrub, lvs. d. green above, l. green below, fr. fleshy, greyish white).

Distribution: recorded from the Malay Peninsula to the Philippines and New Guinea, but the specimens from the Malay Peninsula, the Philippines and New Guinea may well belong to other species.

Remark: The identification is not perfectly certain on account of the incompleteness of the material.

Myrmecodia prob. nov. spec. (1).

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 80 m, April 24: *n. 2549* (epi-

phytic, tuber brown, greenish towards the apex, lvs. l. green, petioles paler, corolla white, fr. yellowish orange; nat. n.: **wáring garàtoe*) — Loc. 2, Pasir Malap, bank of K. Bahewa, alt. 20 m, very frequent, May 14: *n. 3020* (same annotations as in n. 2549, tuber greenish white within, cavities brown) — Loc. 7, G. Piapi, open forest, alt. 350 m, June 2: *n. 3324* (same annotations as in n. 3020).

Remarks: Closely related to *M. goramensis* Becc. from the Moluccas, but distinctly different by the tuber, which is naked or provided with feeble spinules only. *M. Rumphii* Becc. from the Moluccas and *M. sibuyanensis* Elm. from the Philippines are also pretty closely related.

Myrmecodia prob. nov. spec. (2).

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, frequent in old forest, alt. 20 m, June 28: *n. 3663* (epiphytic, sessile, tuber l. greyish green without, white within, cavities l. brown, lvs. bright green, petioles much paler, corolla white; nat. n.: *bóékoh-bóékoh*).

Remarks: Distinct from all described species by the indistinct leafscars, probably related to *M. apoensis* Elm., which also possesses branched spines.

Myrmephytum prob. nov. spec.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Goegoeti, G. Ligòjer, old forest, alt. 100 m, June 24: *n. 3602* (epiphytic, stem d. brown, tuber spineless, d. greyish brown without, white within, cavities bright brown, lvs. d. green above, l. green below, fr. l. green when young; tuber inhabited by large black ants; nat. n.: *bóékoh-bóékoh*).

Remark: As far as we are aware, only two species of this genus are known, one from Celebes and one from the Philippines (Sibuyan).

Nauclea mitragyna (Miq.) Brem., comb. nov. — *Sarcocephalus mitragynus* Miq., Ann. Mus. Bot. Lugd.-Bat. 4, 1868—'69, 180.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, sec. forest, alt. 40 m, April 24: *n. 2536* (small densely branched tree, 4 m high, lvs. shining green above, l. green below, nerves paler, young infl. green, corolla tube white, lobes l. yellow; nat. n.: *antáloet*); wayside, in sec. forest, alt. 100 m, April 27: *n. 2655* (straight tree, ± 13 m high, diam. 0.30 m, lvs. l. green, calyx very l. green, corolla greenish yellow, thecae l. brown, connective d. brown, style and stigma white; nat. n.: *antáloet'a*).

Distribution: Moluccas (Ambon, ? Ceram), Talaud, probably also in the Philippines.

Remarks: The plants from the Philippines recorded under the names of *N. Junghuhnii* (Miq.) Merr. and *Sarcocephalus Horsfieldii* Elm. very probably belong to this species. *N. Junghuhnii* from Sumatra and the Malay Peninsula, *N. subdita* (Miq.) Brem. comb. nov. from Sumatra, Java, Borneo and perhaps the Malay Peninsula and *N. multicephala* (Elm.) Merr. from the Philippines are closely related. *N. Horsfieldii* (Miq.) is a species of doubtful relationship, Haviland unites it with *N. cordata*, but he has not studied the type, which is probably in Kew, at least he does not cite it.

Oldenlandia biflora L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 119.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, frequent on ladang, alt. 150 m, May 21: *n. 3082* (± prostrate herb, lvs. and petioles bright green, stems

slightly violet at base, calyx green, corolla white, fr. l. green, darker with age) — Miangas, Loc. 9, G. Soro, open grass slope, alt. 60 m, frequent, June 11: *n. 3399* (same annotations as n. 3082; nat. n.: *nenàpoe*).

Distribution: tropical Asia to Polynesia.

Oldenlandia pterita (Bl.) Miq., Fl. Ind. Bat. 2, 1857, 193.

Karakelong, Loc. 8, north of Poeloetan, wayside, alt. 5 m, June 4: *n. 3345* (herb, entire plant l. green, stems often slightly violet, calyx pale green, corolla white, fr. l. green; nat. n.: **padóéoet oe papóéa*).

Distribution: India, Indo China, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Philippines, Talaud, Timor.

Ophiorrhiza parviflora Reinw. ex Korth., Ned. Kruidk. Arch. 2, pt. 2, 1851, 127.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, partly cleared old forest, alt. 90 m, April 26: *n. 2634* (undershrub, lvs. d. green above, l. green below, midrib and petiole violet, fr. violet-green) — Loc. 2, old forest, along rivulet, alt. 50 m, May 1: *n. 2719* (same annotations as n. 2634).

Distribution: Salajar, Celebes, Talaud.

Remark: Since flowers are wanting, the determination is somewhat uncertain.

Ophiorrhiza prob. nov. spec. (1).

Karakelong, Loc. 1, partly cleared forest, alt. 40 m, April 25: *n. 2566* (undershrub, lvs. green, paler below, calyx brownish violet, peduncles l. green, corolla greenish white, lobes almost white, style brownish violet, stigma white; nat. n.: *omín'a*) — Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, skirt of sec. forest, alt. 150 m, May 21: *n. 3079* (shrub, stem creeping, greyish brown, peduncle and calyx l. green, fr. d. green).

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, old forest, alt. 20 m, June 28: *n. 3659* (undershrub, lvs. dull d. green above, l. green below, fr. l. green).

Remark: This species shows some affinity to *O. neglecta* Bl. from Java and Sumatra, but more to *O. venosa* Merr. from the Philippines.

Ophiorrhiza nov. spec. (2).

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 40 m, June 20: *n. 3488* (undershrub, lvs. dull d. green above, very l. green below, stem green, calyx and bracts l. green, corolla white, fr. green); Goegoeti, G. Ligòjer, old forest, alt. 80 m, June 24: *n. 3591* (same annotations as n. 3488).

Remarks: Undoubtedly a new species, showing some resemblance to *O. quadrifida* Bl. from Java. Probably more closely related to *O. involucrata* Elm. from the Philippines.

Psychotria leptothyrsa Miq., Ann. Mus. Bot. Lugd.-Bat. 4, 1868, 208.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 40 m, May 3: *n. 2768* (shrub, ± 1 m high, lvs. bright green above, l. green below, petioles reddish, young branchlets greenish red, sometimes yellowish, calyx dirty red, corolla l. yellow, anthers yellowish orange, style dirty red, stigma green, fr. l. green and dirty red).

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, old forest, alt. 20 m, frequent, June 28: *n. 3650* (shrub, ± 2 m high, lvs. as in n. 2768, calyx dirty violet).

Distribution: with certainty known from the Moluccas, Talaud and the Philippines. The records from Java and New Guinea are not correct, since the specimens from those islands belong to other species.

Psychotria aff. **sarmentosa** Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 964.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, old forest, alt. 320 m, May 23: *n. 3149* (liana, lvs. d. green above, l. green below, calyx and corolla l. green in bud).

Distribution: *P. sarmentosa* is probably restricted to western Malaysia, most of the specimens from the eastern part proved to belong to still undescribed species.

Remark: This specimen differs from *P. sarmentosa* by having conspicuous raphide bundles in the leaves.

Psychotria prob. nov. spec. (1).

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, frequent on open sunny slope, alt. 400 m, May 31: *n. 3252* (small tree, ± 4 m high, lvs. bright green, paler below, petioles greenish white, calyx l. green, corolla and ovary greenish white, fr. l. green when young, orange-yellow with age, black in maturity); open forest, alt. 300 m, June 2: *n. 3306* (shrub, ± 2 m high, lvs. shining bright green, midrib greenish white below, petioles l. green, branchlets greyish brown, peduncles l. green, corolla white; nat. n.: *maloempèt'a*).

Remark: The species shows some resemblance with *P. lagunensis* (Merr.) Merr., from the Philippines (Luzon, Polillo, Dinagat) but is not conspecific.

Psychotria prob. nov. spec. (2).

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 100 m, June 21: *n. 3512* (liana, ± 2.5 m long, lvs. d. green above, l. green below, peduncles l. green, calyx and corolla white, stigma brown, fr. white).

Remarks: Shows some resemblance with *P. sarmentosa* Bl. from western Malaysia and with *P. vulcanica* Elm. from Luzon, but differs from both in the granulate surface of the leaves. The above specimen is conspecific with a specimen from Ceram (*Rutten n. 2237*).

Psychotria prob. nov. spec. (3).

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 130 m, June 22: *n. 3535* (curved tree, 7 m high, bole 4 m, diam. 0.12—0.08 m, trunk cylindrical, black with greyish green spots, lvs. d. green, l. green below, fr. reddish orange, persistent calyx dirty green; nat. n.: *kohàka*).

Remark: Fairly closely related to the Philippine species *P. papillata* (Merr.) Merr. and *P. pilosella* Elm., but different from both.

Randia multiflora Koord. & Valet., Meded. 's Lands Plantent. Buitenzorg, 59, 1902, 88.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 100 m, April 30: *n. 2698* (liana, lvs. dull green above, slightly paler below, petioles brownish green, pedicels and calyx l. green, sepals paler towards the tips, corolla tube l. green at base, the rest white, anthers and stigma brownish white, flow. fragrant; nat. n.: *ganggáila* **ahoerángan*).

Distribution: not fully known; recorded from a large part of Malaysia, closely related to *R. uncaria* Elm. from the Philippines.

Remarks: This species is identical with *Posogueria multiflora* Bl., which Blume incorrectly interpreted as being the same species as *Gardenia multiflora* Willd., a synonym of *Randia longiflora* Lam. Therefore Blume's name is illegitimate. The name *Randia multiflora* Koord. & Valet. (1902)

can be considered a new name for the species, as there is no other name given to it before 1902.

Timonius ?celebicus Koord., Nat. Tijdschr. Ned. Ind. 63, 1903, 87.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, skirt of forest, alt. 100 m, April 25: *n. 2587* (tree, 8 m high, diam. 0.14 m, trunk irregularly furrowed, bark l. greyish brown, scaling, lvs. bright green, darker above, stipules shining hairy, yellowish green, calyx l. green, corolla l. yellow; nat. n.: **bambalóéda*) — Kaboeroeang, Loc. 4, Lapean'a forest reserve, frequent in cleared old forest, alt. 75 m, May 26: *n. 3176* (straight tree, 13 m high, bole 10 m, diam. 0.22—0.12 m, trunk cylindrical, branchlets brown, lvs. shining brown hairy when young, d. green above, l. green below when adult, dull, nerves and petioles brownish green, calyx l. green, margins l. brown, corolla l. greenish yellow; wood used for house construction; nat. n.: *bambaróéda*).

Distribution: Celebes, Talaud.

Remarks: The identification is not fully certain by lack of comparing material and also since the description of the species was made after a fruiting specimen.

Uncaria longiflora (Poir.) Merr., Interpret. Herb. Amb., 1917, 480.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, old forest, alt. 60 m, May 4: *n. 2825* (liana, lvs. d. green above, l. green below, nerves paler, fr. l. yellowish green; nat. n.: *ganggáil'a*).

Distribution: not fully certain, but probably restricted to eastern Malaysia (Philippines, Talaud, Moluccas) and replaced by related species (such as *U. pteropoda* Miq.) in the western part.

Uncaria pedicellata Roxb., Fl. Ind., ed. 1, 2, 1824, 128.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, alt. 220 m, May 23: *n. 3153* (liana, lvs. shining d. green above, ± bullate, l. green below, stem, petioles, hooks and peduncles ± ferruginously pubescent, calyx and pedicels l. brown, buds l. green).

Morotai, Loc. 12, old forest, alt. 20 m, June 28: *n. 3655* (liana, nerves of lvs. brown below, calyx l. yellowish green, ovary l. brownish green; nat. n.: *abéteh*).

Distribution: Tenasserim to New Guinea.

Uncaria setiloba Benth., Lond. Journ. Bot. 33, 1897, 84.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Goegoeti, riverbank, alt. 40 m, June 26: *n. 3624* (climbing in shrubs on riverbank, lvs. d. green above, paler below, petioles and midrib reddish above, calyx l. green, corolla tube dirty yellowish green or slightly brownish red, lobes yellowish green, anthers brown, style yellowish green, stigma green; nat. n.: *hohiníngа*).

Distribution: Moluccas (Morotai, Ceram, Ambon); closely related species occur in the Philippines.

Uncaria spec.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, cleared old forest, alt. 100 m, April 26: *n. 2621* (liana, stems yellowish green, infl. entirely l. green; nat. n.: *ganggáil'a*).

Remarks: This specimen differs from *U. setiloba* from the Moluccas by having almost glabrous leaves. It shows resemblance to *U. castellata* Elm. inedit. from Mindanao, which is incorrectly combined with *U. philippinensis* Elm.

CUCURBITACEAE

Gynostemma pedatum Bl., Bijdr., 1825, 23.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Goegoeti, riverbank, alt. 40 m, June 26: *n. 3625* (twining, several m long, lvs. d. green above, lower surface and petioles paler, infl. green; nat. n.: *ròtoe-ròtoe*).

Distribution: India to Japan, Philippines and New Guinea.

Momordica cochinchinensis (Lour.) Spreng., Syst. 3, 1826, 14.

Morotai, Loc. 12, Marilako, skirt of old forest, alt. 20 m, June 28: *n. 3646* (twining, ± 10 m long, lvs. bright green, buds l. green, fr. l. green, bracts yellow with age; nat. n.: *toròhoekoe*).

Distribution: India and China to Philippines and New Guinea.

GOODENIACEAE

Scaevola frutescens (Mill.) Krause in Engl., Pflanzenr. 54, 1912, 125, fig. 25.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, beach, alt. 0.5 m, frequent, April 23: *n. 2481* (dense shrub, 2.5 m high, lvs. l. green, midrib and petioles greenish white, calyx l. green, corolla green without, white within, margins violet, style, ovary and young fr. l. green, stigma greenish white; nat. n.: *kanoembóélan'a*) — Nenoesa, Loc. 10, Merampi, limestone, 100 m alt., June 13: *n. 3425* (shrub, ± 2 m high, same annotations as n. 2481, fr. green, white with age; juice used as medecine against eye-affections by dropping it into the eye; nat. n.: *panimbóéran'a*) — Miangas, Loc. 9, beach, alt. 1 m, very frequent, June 11: *n. 3375* (same annotations as n. 2481).

Distribution: Madagascar to Polynesia.

Scaevola micrantha Presl, Rel. Haenk. 2, 1830, 59.

Karakelong, Loc. 7, G. Piapi, very frequent in open sunny slope, alt. 300 m, May 31: *n. 3266* (shrub, 0.5—2 m high, lvs. dull d. green with paler midrib above, peduncles and calyx green, corolla tube green, lobes violet without, white within, filaments white, anthers l. brown, style l. green, stigma violet-brown, tip white, fr. l. green, black when ripe; nat. n.: *panimbóéran'a*).

Distribution: Philippines, Talaud.

COMPOSITAE (J. Th. Koster)

Adenostemma Lavenia (L.) O. Ktze, Rev. Gen. Pl., 1891, 304; Koster, Blumea 1, 1935, 470.

Salebaboe, Loc. 3, G. Ajambana, very frequent on ladang, alt. 150 m, May 21: *n. 3088* (entire plant bright green, corolla white).

Distribution: India to Polynesia.

Ageratum conyzoides L., Sp. Pl., 1753, 839; Koster, l.c. 484.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, alang-alang field, alt. 100 m, April 25: *n. 2604* (lvs. and involucre l. green, corolla white, somewhat lilac; nat. n.: **radóéoet oe manáro*).

Distribution: a native of tropical America, now pantropic.

Bidens chinensis (L.) Willd., Sp. Pl. 3, 1804, 1719.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, alang-alang field, alt. 120 m, April 27: *n. 2649* (herb, lvs. dull green, darker above, with stem and petioles often slightly violet, involucre l. green, ray-flow. l. yellow, disc-flow. bright yellow, fr. d. green, spines l. green; nat. n.: *dandi'it*).

Distribution: paleotropic.

Blumea balsamifera (L.) DC., Prodr. 5, 1836, 447.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, alang-alang field, alt. 100 m, April 27: *n. 2660* (stout herb, 1.7 m high, lvs. green, white tomentose, involucre l. green, white tomentose; nat. n.: *maransàm'a*).

Distribution: India and S. China to Philippines, Moluccas and Lesser Sunda Islands.

Blumea lacera (Burm. f.) DC., Prodr. 5, 1836, 436.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, alang-alang field, alt. 100 m, April 25: *n. 2591* (lvs. l. green, involucre l. green, corolla yellow; nat. n.: *sasaráwi*).

Distribution: tropical Africa to New Caledonia.

Blumea laciniata (Roxb.) DC., Prodr. 5, 1836, 436.

Karakelong, Loc. 2, on recent landslide, alt. 50 m, May 11: *n. 2958* (herb, entire plant bright green, involucre green, corolla yellow).

Distribution: India to Philippines and New Guinea.

Emilia sonchifolia (L.) DC., Prodr. 6, 1837, 302.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, alang-alang field, alt. 100 m, April 25: *n. 2596* (erect herb, lvs. bluish green, involucre l. green, corolla l. violet; nat. n.: *liléwan katowàn'a*).

Distribution: pantropic.

Vernonia cinerea (L.) Less., Linnaea 4, 1829, 291; Koster, Blumea 1, 1935, 407.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, alang-alang field, alt. 100 m, April 25: *n. 2589* (involucre green, corolla white).

Distribution: originally paleotropic, now pantropic.

Vernonia lanceolata (Warb.) Mattf., Engl. Jahrb. 62, 1929, 401; Koster, l.c. 418.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, wayside, alt. 30 m, April 26: *n. 2630* (herb, 1.5 m high, lvs. l. green, petioles and midrib somewhat reddish, involucre green, corolla l. lilac, pappus white).

Distribution: Talaud, Moluccas, New Guinea, New Ireland.

Wedelia biflora (L.) DC. in Wight, Contrib. Bot. Ind., 1834, 18.

Karakelong, Loc. 1, frequent in sec. forest, April 23: *n. 2477* (± prostrate, some m high, involucre green, ray-flow. yellow, disc-flow. darker; nat. n.: *natóénoe*) — Miangas, Loc. 9, coconut plantation, alt. 10 m, June 11: *n. 3394* (herb, more or less climbing, dull green, lower surface and petioles paler, involucre green, ray-flow. bright yellow, disc-flow. darker; nat. n.: *daróénoe*).

Distribution: India to Polynesia.

Index to Families and Genera

(Systematic Part).

215 — Flagellaria 166 — FLAGELLARIACEAE 166 — Floscopa 167 — Freycinetia 149, 161.

G. Gahnia 164 — Galeola 171 — Garcinia 148, 214 — Garnotia 162 — Garuga 198 — Geniostoma 230 — GESNERIACEAE 238 — Geunsia 236 — Ginalloa 178 — Gironniera 173 — Gleichenia 152 — GLEICHENIACEAE 152 — Glochidion 201 — Glycosmis 196 — GNETACEAE 160 — Gnetum 160 — Gomphandra 205 — GONYSTYLACEAE 148 — Gonystylus 148 — GOODENIACEAE 252 — GRAMINEAE 161 — Graptophyllum 239 — Grewia 211 — Gronophyllum 165 — Guettarda 149, 244 — GUTTIFERAE 148, 214 — Gymnacranthera 183 — Gymnema 232 — Gymnosiphon 148 — Gynochthodes 149, 244 — Gynostemma 252 — Gyrinopsis 216.

H. Haplolobus 198 — Harpullia 208 — Hedyotis 245 — Helicia 149 — Helminthostachys 151 — Hemigraphis 239 — Hernandia 185 — HERNANDIACEAE 185 — Hibiscus 212 — Hippocratea 205 — HIPPOCRATEACEAE 205 — Homalanthus 202 — Homalium 215 — Homalomena 148, 165 — Horsfieldia 184 — Hoya 232 — Humata 156 — Hydnophytum 245 — Hygrophila 243 — Hymenachne 163 — Hymenolepis 157 — HYMENOPHYLLACEAE 152 — Hypolytrum 148 — Hyptis 237.

I. Iaera 222 — ICACINACEAE 205 — Ilex 204 — Ilysanthes 237 — Impatiens 148 — Inocarpus 192 — Intsia 192 — Iodes 205 — Ipomoea 232 — Ischaemum 163 — Ixora 245.

J. Jagera 200 — Jasminum 229 — Jussieua 221.

K. Kibara 185 — Kleinhovia 212 — Knoxia 246 — Koordersiodendron 204 — Kyllinga 165.

L. LABIATAE 237 — Lachnostoma 246 — Laportea 149, 176 — LAURACEAE 148, 185 — LECYTHIDACEAE 217 — Leea 210 — LEGUMINOSAE 148, 186 — Lemna 148 — LEMNACEAE 148 — Lepidagathis 243 — Lepiniopsis 231 — Lepistemon 233 — Leptaspis 163 — Leucosyke 176 — LILIACEAE 148, 167 — Lindernia 237 — Lindsaya 157 — Linociera 230 — Litsea 148, 185 — LOGANIACEAE 148, 230 — Lophopyxis 205 — LORANTHACEAE 177 — Lumnitzera 217 — Lunasia 196 — LYCOPODIACEAE 150 — Lycopodium 150 — Lygodium 151 — LYTHRACEAE 216.

M. Macaranga 148, 202 — Macropsychanthus 192 — Maesa 225 — MAGNOLIACEAE 180 — Mallotus 202 — MALVACEAE 212 — Manilkara 226 — Maoutia 176 — Mapania 148 — MARANTACEAE 148, 169 — Mariscus 165 — Mastersia 194 — Matthaea 185 — Medinilla 220 — Melanolepis 203 — Melastoma 220 — MELASTOMATACEAE 219 — MELIACEAE 149, 198 — Melicope 196 — Melochia 212 — Memecylon 220 — MENISPERMACEAE 180 — Merremia 234 — Mezzettia 148 — Microlepia 157 — Micromelum 196 — Microstegium 163 — Microstylis 171 — Millettia 148 — Mischophloeus 165 — Mollugo 179 — Momordica 252 — Monerma 163 — MONIMIACEAE 184 — Monogramma 157 — MORACEAE 149, 173 — Morinda 149, 247 — Mucuna 194 — Mussaenda 247 — Mycetia 247 — Myristica 184 — MYRISTICACEAE 183 — Myrmecodia 149, 247 — Myrmephytum 149, 248 — MYRSINACEAE 149, 224 — MYRTACEAE 149, 218 — Myrtella 219 — Myxopyrum 230.

N. NAJADACEAE 149 — Najas 149 — Nauclea 248 — Nephrolepis 157 — Notaphoebe 185 — NYCTAGINACEAE 179.

O. OCHNACEAE 213 — Ochrosia 231 — Octomeles 216 — OLACACEAE 149, 178 — Oldenlandia 149, 248 — OLEACEAE 229 — ONAGRACEAE 221 — OPHIOGLOSSACEAE 151 — Ophioglossum 151 — Ophiorrhiza 149, 249 — OPILIACEAE 178 — Oplismenus 163 — ORCHIDACEAE 149, 169 — Ormosia 195 — Osbeckia 221 — Osbornia 219 — Osmelia 215 — Otophora 209 — OXALIDACEAE 196.

P. Palaquium 226 — PALMAE 149, 165 — PANDANACEAE 149, 161 — Pandanus 149, 161 — Panicum 163 — Parastemon 186 — Parkia 195 — Parsonsia 231 — Paspalum 163 — Passiflora 215 — PASSIFLORACEAE 215 — Pemphis 216 — Pericampylus 180 — Peristrophe 243 — Peristylis 172 — Phaleria 216 — Phyllanthus 203 — Physalis 237 — Pimeleodendron 203 — Piper 149, 172 — PIPERACEAE 149, 172 — Pipturus 176 — Pisonia 179 — PITTOSPORACEAE 186 — Pittosporum 186 — Planchonella 227 — Plectronia 149 — Pleomele 148 — Plocoglottis 149 — Podocarpus 160 — Podochilus 172 — Polanisia 186 — Polyalthia 183 — Polygala 199 — POLYGALACEAE 199 — POLYGONACEAE 178 — Polygonum 178 — POLYPODIACEAE 149, 153 — Polypodium 158 — Polyscias 222 — Polystachya 172 — Pometia 149, 209 — Pongamia 195 — Pothos

Addendum:

GENERAL PART, Literature (p. 145):

UMBGROVE, J. H. F., Corals from an elevated marl of Talaud (East Indies) — Zoolog. Meded. XX, 1938, 263—274.